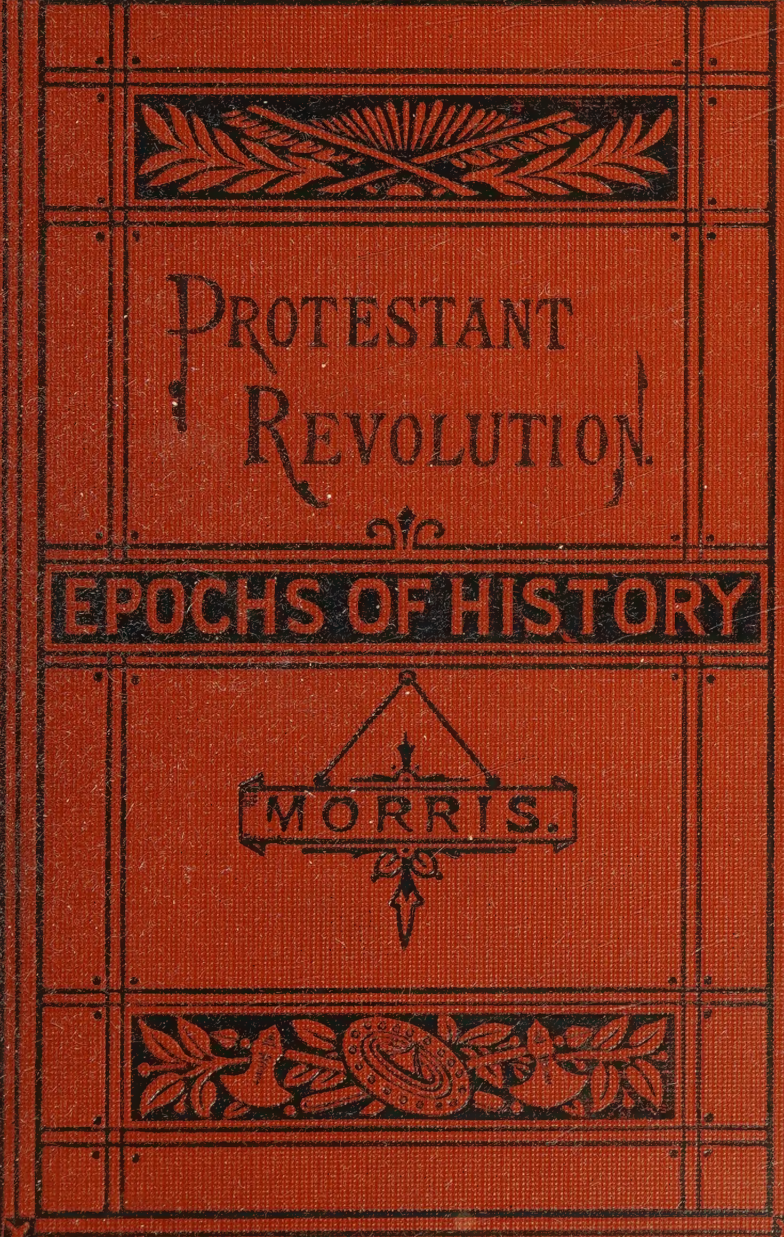


PROTESTANT REVOLUTION

EPOCHS OF HISTORY

MORRIS.

Library of
Central Baptist Theological Seminary

Classification Accession

Gift
Purchase
Date

R. J. LIBRARY
K. C. K.
BAPTIST SEMINARY

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2025

https://archive.org/details/epochsofhistorye0000fred

Haseltine Jarrell
1910.

EPOCHS of HISTORY

EDITED BY

EDWARD E. MORRIS, M.A.

THE ERA

OF

THE PROTESTANT REVOLUTION

F. SEEBOHM

LIBRARY
CENTRAL BAPTIST SEMINARY
KANSAS CITY 2, KANSAS

EPOCHS OF ANCIENT HISTORY.

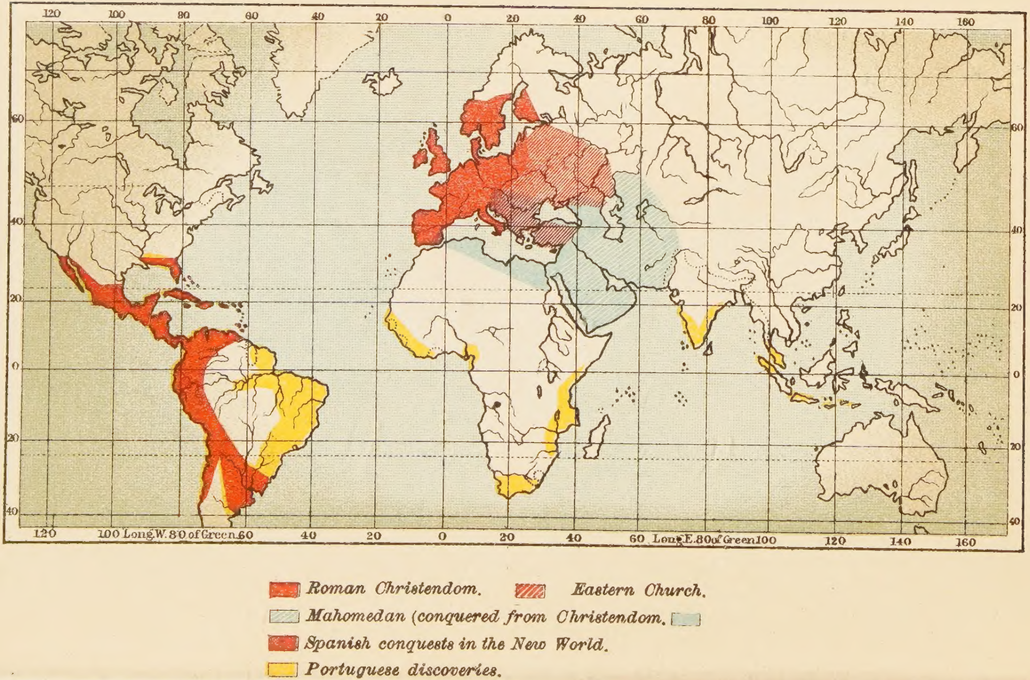
Edited by Rev. G. W. Cox and Charles Sankey, M. A. Eleven volumes, 16mo, with 41 Maps and Plans. Price per vol., $1.00. The set, Roxburgh style, gilt top, in box, $11.00.

Troy—Its Legend, History, and Literature. By S. G. W. Benjamin.
The Greeks and the Persians. By G. W. Cox.
The Athenian Empire. By G. W. Cox.
The Spartan and Theban Supremacies. By Charles Sankey.
The Macedonian Empire. By A. M. Curteis.
Early Rome. By W. Ihne.
Rome and Carthage. By R. Bosworth Smith.
The Gracchi, Marius, and Sulla. By A. H. Beesley.
The Roman Triumvirates. By Charles Merivale.
The Early Empire. By W. Wolfe Capes.
The Age of the Antonines. By W. Wolfe Capes.

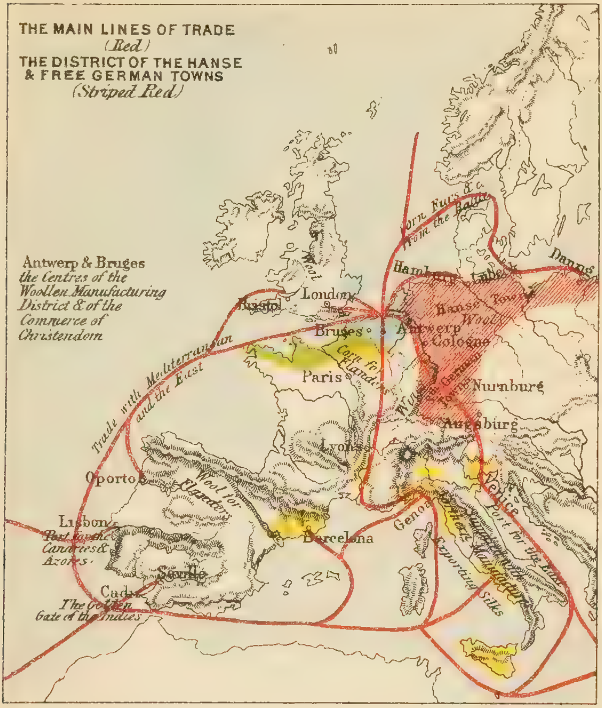
EPOCHS OF MODERN HISTORY.

Edited by Edward E. Morris. Eighteen volumes, 16mo, with 77 Maps, Plans, and Tables. Price per vol., $1.00. The set, Roxburgh style, gilt top, in box, $18.00.

The Beginning of the Middle Ages. By R. W. Church.
The Normans in Europe. By A. H. Johnson.
The Crusades. By G. W. Cox.
The Early Plantagenets. By Wm. Stubbs.
Edward III. By W. Warburton.
The Houses of Lancaster and York. By James Gairdner.
The Era of the Protestant Revolution. By Frederic Seebohm.
The Early Tudors. By C. E. Moberly.
The Age of Elizabeth. By M. Creighton.
The Thirty Years War, 1618–1648. By S. R. Gardiner.
The Puritan Revolution. By S. R. Gardiner.
The Fall of the Stuarts. By Edward Hale.
The English Restoration and Louis XIV. By Osmond Airy.
The Age of Anne. By Edward E. Morris.
The Early Hanoverians. By Edward E. Morris.
Frederick the Great. By F. W. Longman.
The French Revolution and First Empire. By W. O'Connor Morris. Appendix by Andrew D. White.
The Epoch of Reform, 1830-1850. By Justin Macarthy.


100 Long. W. 80 of Green. 60
60 Long. E. 80 of Green 100
120
100
80
60
40
20
0
20
40
60
80
100
120
140
160
60
40
20
0
20
40
Roman Christendom.
Eastern Church.
Mahomedan (conquered from Christendom.
Spanish conquests in the New World.
Portuguese discoveries.

THE COMMERCE OF CHRISTENDOM


THE MAIN LINES OF TRADE
(Red)
THE DISTRICT OF THE HANSE
& FREE GERMAN TOWNS
(Striped Red)
Antwerp & Bruges
the Centres of the
Woollen Manufacturing
District & of the
Commerce of
Christendom
Corn, Furs &c. from the Baltic
Hamburg
Lubeck
Dantzig
Hanse Towns
Wool
London
Bristol
Bruges
Antwerp
Cologne
Corn for Flanders
Paris
Trade with Mediterranean and the East
Wine
South German Towns
Nurnburg
Augsburg
Lyons
Oporto
Wool for Flanders
Lisbon
Port for the Canaries & Azores
Seville
Cadiz
The Golden Gate of the Indies
Barcelona
Genoa
Exporting Silks
Venice
Port for the East

MANUFACTURING DISTRICTS.

Woollen	*Blue*	*Supplied with Wool from England, Spain and Hesse, and Corn from France and the ports on the Baltic—Exporting Woollen goods all over Christendom.*
Linen	*Green*	*In close connection with the Woollen.*
Silk	*Yellow*	*In Italy, Sicily, Catalonia, Lyons, &c. These Districts supplied with Woollen goods from the north by sea and by the Overland Commerce through Germany to Venice.*

THE ERA

OF THE

PROTESTANT REVOLUTION

BY

FREDERIC SEEBOHM

AUTHOR OF

'THE OXFORD REFORMERS—COLET, ERASMUS, AND MORE'

SECOND EDITION

With Notes on Books in English relating to the Reformation,
by GEO. P. FISHER, D.D., Professor of Ecclesiastical
History in Yale College, author of "*History
of the Reformation*," &c.

NEW YORK
CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS
1909

910.22
Su51

SUMMARY.

PART I.

STATE OF CHRISTENDOM.

CHAPTER I.

Introductory.

PAGE

(*a*) *The Small Extent of Christendom.*—Smaller than it once had been. The Mohammedan power checked in the West, but encroaching from the East. Kinship between Christians, Mohammedans, and Jews, but they hate one another. 1

(*b*) *The Signs of New Life in Christendom.*—Influence of the crusaders. Inventions. Fall of Constantinople. Revival of learning. Printing. 3

(*c*) *The Widening of Christendom.*—Moors driven out of Spain. Discovery of America. New way to East Indies. Men's minds prepared for great events. 4

(*d*) *The New Era one of Progress in Civilization.*—What civilization is. The old Roman civilization. Its main vice. Modern civilization. Its strength. The crisis of the struggle between the old and the new order of things. Plan of this book. . . . 5

CHAPTER II.

THE POWERS BELONGING TO THE OLD ORDER OF THINGS, AND GOING OUT.

(*a*) *The Ecclesiastical System.*—The Ecclesiastical Empire. Rome its capital. Independent of the civil power. The monks. Power of the ecclesiastical system, by its influence over the people, by its wealth, by the monopoly of learning and political influence, which all centred in Rome. This Empire will be broken up in the Era 8

(*b*) *The Scholastic System.* The learned world talked and wrote in Latin, and belonged to the clergy. This made learning scholastic, shackled science, and religion also, and kept them from the common people. Necessity of mental freedom. The Universities. Students pass from one to another. The result of this in the days of Wiclif. Will be repeated in the new Era. The work of the Era 11

8463

PAGE

(*c*) *The Feudal System and the Forces which were breaking it up.*—It divided countries into petty lordships. Decay of the feudal system. Subjection of feudal lords to the Crown. Increasing power of the Crown. The growth of commerce. Trade of the Mediterranean. The manufacturing districts. The fisheries. The commerce of the Hanse towns. Bruges and Antwerp the central marts of commerce. Lines of maritime, inland, and overland trade. The towns had mostly got free. Why the towns hated feudalism and favored the Crown. The feudal peasantry once were more free than afterwards under the feudal system. Where the central power was weakest, feudal serfdom lingered longest. The towns and commerce favoured freedom of the peasantry 16

CHAPTER III.

THE MODERN NATIONS WHICH WERE RISING INTO POWER.

(*a*) *Italy.*—Italy not a united nation. Rome, according to Machiavelli, the cause of her disunity. Rome a centre of rottenness. Dante and Petrarch described her vices. Recent Popes bad men. Alexander VI. and Cæsar Borgia. Their crimes. Effect of Papal wickedness. Main divisions of Italy. Papal States. Venice. Florence. Milan. Naples. Papal politics the ruin of Italy by promoting invasion by France and Spain. 22

(*b*) *Germany.*—Germany had not yet attained national unity. The emperor claimed to be Cæsar and King of Rome. His claim to universal empire very shadowy. How elected. The feudal ceremony. There were no imperial domains. Very little imperial power. The Emperor Maximilian powerful as head of the Austrian House of Hapsburg. Charles V. powerful because of his Austrian and Spanish dominions. The Diets had no power to enforce their decrees. The feudal system still prevailed. Subdivision of lordships by law of inheritance. Constant petty feuds. Lawlessness of the knights. The towns of Germany. Their leagues for mutal defence. Want of a central power to maintain the public peace. The condition of the peasantry growing harder and harder for want of a central power. History of the German "Bauer." Rebellion his only remedy 27

(*c*) *Spain.*—Spain was becoming the first power in Europe. Power of the nobles. Driven into the north by the Moors. Reconquest of Spain from the Moors, except Granada which held out. Kingdoms of Castile and Arragon united under Ferdinand and Isabella. Spain thenceforth tends to become an absolute monarchy. Conquest of Granada. Ferdinand's policy to complete Spain on the map. Columbus. Foreign policy. Royal marriages. Success of these alliances. Domestic policy. Subjugation of the nobles. The Inquisition. Banishment of the Jews. Independent policy towards Rome. Colonial policy. Christianity introduced into the New World, but slavery with it. 35

(*d*) *France.*—How all France had grown into one nation. France claimed Milan, and Naples also. This union of all France the result of the crown being hereditary, primogeniture, and intermarriage with the royal family. The towns. Final struggle of the Crown with Burgundy. English conquests at an end. The English wars had helped to unite the nation and increase the power of the Crown; but there were seeds of disunion within. The crown had become absolute. Royal taxes without consent of the people. Royal standing army. The noblesse a privileged untaxed caste. The peasantry not serfs, but taxed, paying rents, and tithes, and taille. Their grievances. The middle-class leave the country for the towns. Separation of classes the main vice in French polity. Love of foreign wars the chief vice in her policy. 41

(c) *England.*—The English nation had for long been consolidated. The nobility not a caste. Importance of the middle classes of citizens and yeomen. The Crown and all classes subject to the laws. The government a constitutional monarchy, i. e. the king could make no new laws and levy no taxes without consent of parliament. The ecclesiastics not altogether Englishmen, but held large possessions. The Pope also drew revenues from England. The peasantry had got free from feudal servitude and were becoming a wage-earning class. Freedom did not necessarily make them materially better off. They had no share in the government, but there was nothing in the laws to prevent their getting it. Henry VII. was a Welshman, and landed in Wales. His throne precarious. Other claimants. Lambert Simnel. Perkin Warbeck. Henry VII.'s foreign policy was alliance with Spain. Hence the marriage with Catherine of Arragon. Henry VII.'s domestic policy. His position as regards Parliament. His minister, Cardinal Morton. Order maintained. Middle class favoured. The way paved for the union of England and Scotland. The Welsh finally conciliated, and England's colonial empire begun. The tomb of Henry VII. 48

CHAPTER IV.

THE NEED OF REFORM AND DANGER OF REVOLUTION.

(a) *The Necessity for Reform.*—Italy and Germany not yet united nations. The lack of international peace and justice. The serfdom of the German peasantry still continued. The ecclesiastical and scholastic systems needed reform. The alternatives were reform or revolution. 51

(b) *The Train laid for Revolution.*—Chiefly among the German peasantry. Their ecclesiastical as well as feudal grievances. Contemporary testimony. Successful rebellion of the Swiss in 1315, and the peasants of the Graubund 1441—71. Unsuccessful rebellion of the Lollards and Hussite wars 1415—1436. Threats of rebellion in Franconia in 1476. The *Bundschuh.* Rebellion in Kempten 1492. In Elsass 1493. Both again in 1501–2. In the Black Forest 1512–13, under Joss Fritz. In 1514 in Würtemberg and the Austrian Alps. The Swabian league of nobles against the peasants. Far and wide the train was laid for future revolution. The train laid not where serfdom was at its worst, but where freedom was nearest in sight. 59

P. J. LIBRARY
K. C. K.
BAPTIST SEMINARY

PART II.

THE PROTESTANT REVOLUTION.

CHAPTER I.

REVIVAL OF LEARNING AND REFORM AT FLORENCE.

PAGE

(*a*) *The Revivers of Learning at Florence.*—The Republic of Florence. Power in the hands of the Medici. Cosmo de' Medici 1389–1464. Lorenzo de' Medici 1448–1492. Florence the Modern Athens. Michael Angelo. The Platonic Academy, Ficino, Politian, and Pico della Mirandola. Semi pagan tendencies of the revival of learning. 68

(*b*) *The great Florentine Reformer, Girolamo Savonarola*, 1452–1498. —He becomes a religious reformer. Made Prior of St. Mark at Florence. Stirs up in the people the spirit of reform and freedom Death of Lorenzo and Innocent VIII. The French Invasion of Italy. The Medici expelled. The republic restored. Savonarola's reforms. He becomes fanatical. Is martyred by order of Pope Alexander VI. 71

(*c*) *Savonarola's Influence on the Revivers of Learning.*—His influence over Pico, Politian, and Ficino. 74

(*d*) *Niccolo Machiavelli*, 1469–1527.—Secretary to the Republic at Florence, and then serves the Medici. Writes 'The Prince,' in which he codifies the vicious maxims of Italian policy since called 'Machiavellian.' 75

CHAPTER II.

THE OXFORD REFORMERS.

(*a*) *The Spirit of Revival of Learning and Reform is carried from Italy to Oxford.*—Distinction and connection between the revival of learning and Religious reform. Both against the Scholastic system. The reform movement crushed at Florence. Revivers of learning at Oxford. Grocyn and Linacre go to Italy, and return to Oxford. John Colet does the same. Colet unites the spirit of the new learning and religious reform. 76

(*b*) *Colet, More and Erasmus join in fellow-work.*—Lectures on St. Paul's Epistles at Oxford. Attacks the schoolmen. He urges also the need of ecclesiastical reform. Colet attracts disciples and fellow workers. Thomas More. Erasmus. Early life of Erasmus. He comes to Oxford. Makes friends with Colet and Thomas More. Comes under Colet's influence. 78

(*c*) *The Oxford students are scattered till the Accession of Henry VIII.*—Exactions of Empson and Dudley. More offends Henry VII. The circle of Oxford students formed again in London. . 82

(*d*) *On the accession of Henry VIII they commence their fellow-work.* Hopes on the accession of Henry VIII. The Oxford students in Court favour. Erasmus Greek professor at Cambridge. 84

(*e*) *Erasmus writes his 'Praise of Folly.'*—Satire on the scholastic theologians, monks, and popes 85

PAGE

(*f*) *Colet founds St. Paul's School.*—It is a school of the new learning, and excites the malice of men of the old school. His sermon on Ecclesiastical Reform. Escapes from a charge of heresy. . . 86

(*g*) *The Continental Wars of Henry VIII.*, 1511–1512.—The Holy Alliance against France. Henry VIII.'s first campaign. Wolsey. Julius II. succeeded by Leo X. Henry persists in invading France. Gains the Battle of the Spurs. Scotch invasion of England. Battle of Flodden. Henry VIII. now joins France against Spain. Louis XII. succeeded by Francis I. Francis I invades Italy and recovers Milan. Again Spain and England combine against France. These wars of kings against the interests of Europe, and tended to make kings absolute. The example of France. Narrow escape of England. Colet preaches against the wars. Erasmus is against them too, and also More. 88

(*h*) *The kind of Reform aimed at by the Oxford Reformers.*—Erasmus made a Councillor of Prince Charles. More drawn into Henry VIII.'s service. The 'Christian Prince' of Erasmus. More's 'Utopia.' They entered thoroughly into the spirit of modern civilization. The character of their religious reform. The New Testament of Erasmus. The kind of ecclesiastical reform urged by the Oxford Reformers. They aimed at a broad and tolerant Church, and were likely to oppose schism. 93

CHAPTER III.

THE WITTENBERG REFORMERS.

(*a*) *Martin Luther becomes, a Reformer.*—Luther born 1483. Sent to school and to the University of Erfurt. Becomes a monk. Adopts the theology of St. Augustine, and in this differed from the Oxford Reformers. He removes to Wittenberg. Visits Rome. Reads the New Testament of Erasmus and finds out the difference in their theology. 97

(*b*) *The Sale of Indulgences.*—Leo X.'s scheme to get money by indulgences. Offers princes a share in the spoil. Erasmus writes bitterly against it, but pope and kings will not listen. . . 100

(*c*) *Luther's Attack on Indulgences.*—Tetzel comes near Wittenberg selling Indulgences. Luther's theses against indulgences. He is backed by the Elector of Saxony. Philip Melanchthon comes to Wittenberg. 101

(*d*) *The Election of Charles V. to the Empire* (1519).—Death of Maximilian. Candidates for the Empire. Charles V. elected through the influence of the Elector of Saxony. Extent of Charles V.'s rule. 103

(*e*) *Luther's Breach with Rome.*—Luther finds himself a Hussite. Rumoured Papal Bull against Luther. Luther's pamphlet to the nobility of the German nation, and another on the 'Babylonish Captivity of the Church.' The Bull arrives. 106

(*f*) *The Elector of Saxony consults Erasmus*, Dec 6, 1520.—Aleander, the Pope's nuncio, tries to win over the Elector of Saxony. The Elector asks advice of Erasmus. The advice of Erasmus. The Elector follows it, and urges moderation on Luther. . . . 108

(*g*) *Luther burns the Pope's Bull*, *Dec.* 10, 1520, notwithstanding the cautions of the Elector. Erasmus fears revolution. . . . 111

CHAPTER IV.

THE CRISIS.—REFORM OR REVOLUTION.—REFORM REFUSED BY THE RULING POWERS.

PAGE

(*a*) *Ulrich von Hutten and Franz von Sickingen.*—The Robin Hoods of Germany side with Luther. Ulrich von Hutten. His satire upon Rome. His German popular rhymes against Rome. Demands freedom. Small chances of Reform. 113

(*b*) *The Diet of Worms meets 28th January*, 1521.—'Agenda' at the Diet of Worms: to stop private war, to settle disputes, to provide central power in the Emperor's absence, and to take notice of the books of Martin Luther. No hope for the peasantry. Brief from Rome about Luther. The Electors hesitate to sanction the edict against Luther. Hutten adjures the Emperor not to yield to Rome. Luther summoned to Worms. 115

(*c*) *Luther's Journey to Worms* (1521). Luther's Antithesis of Christ and Antichrist. Luther sets off for Worms. His journey. Popular excitement. Luther's heroic firmness. He enters Worms. . 119

(*d*) *Luther before the Diet.*—Luther's first appearance before the Diet. He asks for time to consider his answer. They give him till the next day. Excitement in Worms. Luther's second appearance before the Diet. His speech. Repeats his speech in Latin. Refuses to recant. The Emperor decides against Luther. Threats of Revolution. The Electors urge delay. Luther leaves Worms. What Luther did at Worms for Germany and for Christendom. 127

(*e*) *Edict Against Luther.*—Fears of the papal party. Rumours of Luther's capture. The Elector of Saxony leaves Worms. Treaty between Charles V. and the Pope. The Edict issued against Luther. Letter from Valdez, the Emperor's secretary. 129

(*f*) *Political Reasons for the Decision at Worms.*—Rivalship between Spain and France. Intrigues of princes. France the common enemy of the Pope, Spain, and England. Reform refused by the ruling powers from political motives. 132

CHAPTER V.

REVOLUTION.

(*a*) *The Prophets of Revolution.*—Popular feeling against the Edict. Luther in the Wartburg. In his absence wilder spirits take the lead. The prophets of Zwickau. Luther comes back to Wittenberg and confronts the prophets. His common sense prevails. The prophets driven from Wittenberg. Münzer becomes the prophet of the peasantry. 135

(*b*) *The End of Sickingen and Hutten.*—The Council of Regency under the Elector of Saxony strives to avert the storm, but meets with opposition. Franz von Sickingen takes to the sword, but is defeated and killed. Hutten's death. The peasantry get nothing from the knights. 138

(*c*) *The Peasants' War.*—Carlstadt and Münzer stir up rebellion. Insurrection of the peasantry in Swabia. Their twelve articles. Not likely to be granted by either Pope, nobles, or Luther. Swabian peasants crushed in April, 1525. Insurrection on the Neckar, April, 1525. The peasants' revenge for Swabian slaughters. The retaliation of the nobles, May, 1525. Insurrection in Franconia. Revolution in the towns of Franconia. Diary of a citizen of Roth-

PAGE

enburg. Insurrection in Elsass and Lorraine put down, May, 1525. Insurrection in Bavaria, the Tyrol, and Carinthia. Münzer heads an insurrection in Thuringia. His mad proclamation. Death of Münzer. The attitude of Luther during the Peasants' War. Who was really to blame? Death of the Elector of Saxony, May, 1525. 140

(*d*) *The Sack of Rome*, 1527.—Alliance of the Pope and the Emperor against France. Henry VIII. joins it. Pope Leo X. dies, 1521. Adrian VI. and Clement VII. Pope, 1523. Duke of Bourbon joins the league against France. Francis I. crosses the Alps, but made prisoner at the battle of Pavia. Rupture between Charles V. and the Pope. Result of the Diet of Spires. March of a German army on Rome. The Sack of Rome. Result of the Papal policy. 154

PART III.

RESULTS OF THE PROTESTANT REVOLUTION.

CHAPTER I.

REVOLTS FROM ROME.

(I.) IN SWITZERLAND AND GERMANY.

(*a*) *Meaning of Revolt from Rome.*—A political change. The Teutonic nations revolted; the Romanic nations remained under Rome. In some nations there was a national revolt; in some divided action and civil wars. 160

(*b*) *The Revolt in Switzerland.*—Switzerland divided into cantons. Civil power vested in the people. Ulrich Zwingle the Swiss reformer, settles at Zurich. Zurich assumes to itself ecclesiastical powers. Berne does the same soon after. Civil war. Peace of Cappel. Character of Zwingle. Luther quarrels with Zwingle. 163

(*c*) *The Revolt in Germany.*—The freedom of the German peasantry postponed for ten generations. The Diet of Spires, 1526, left each state to take its own course about Luther. Hence arose Protestant states, with national churches free from Rome, while others remained Catholic. The second Diet of Spires, 1529, reversed the decision, notwithstanding the protest of the *Protestant* princes. Civil war averted by the Turks' attack on Vienna. The Turks driven back. Charles V. turned again upon German heretics. Diet of Augsburg. The 'Augsburg Confession.' Protestant princes form the league of Schmalkald for mutual defence. Civil war postponed during Luther's life, but it begins soon after his death. Spanish conquest of Germany. Revolt of the Protestant princes. Defeat of Charles V.; his abdication and death. The Peace of Augsburg (1555) and its rule of mock toleration. Evils brought upon Germany by Charles V.'s policy. 166

CHAPTER II.

REVOLT OF ENGLAND FROM ROME.

PAGE

(*a*) *Its Political Character.*—In England the revolt from Rome was national and came at first from political causes. 171

(*b*) *Reasons for Henry VIII.'s Loyalty to Rome.*—Henry VIII. defends the divine authority of the Pope, and writes a book against Luther in 1521. He tells Sir Thomas More of a secret reason for it. Henry VIII.'s marriage with Catherine of Arragon. Secret doubts about its validity. Its unsatisfactory beginning. Its validity rested on the divine authority of the Pope. Henry VIII.'s anxiety about it and the succession. His anxiety to keep on good terms with the Pope and Charles V. Execution of the Duke of Buckingham for having his eye upon the succession to the throne. . 172

(*c*) *Sir Thomas More defends Henry VIII. against Luther.*—Effect of the knowledge of Henry VIII.'s secret reasons on Sir Thomas More's mind. Reaction in the minds of Erasmus and More against Luther. 176

(*d*) *Reasons for Henry VIII.'s Change of Policy.*—Wolsey the great war minister of Henry VIII. More opposed to the wars with France. Charles V.'s treachery, and the Pope's. Henry VIII.'s foreign policy all at sea again. 178

(*e*) *The Crisis.—Henry VIII. determines upon the Divorce from Catherine of Arragon.*—Results of breach with Spain. Political reasons for the divorce from Catherine. Wolsey tries to get the Pope to grant a divorce, but fails. Henry VIII. takes the matter into his own hands. 180

(*f*) *Fall of Wolsey* (1529–1530.) 181

(*g*) *The Parliament of* 1529–1536. *Revolt of England from Rome.*—Sir Thomas More lord chancellor. Parliament of 1529 a crisis in English history, like the Diet of Worms in German history. Complaints against the clergy and ecclesiastical abuses. Wolsey's attempts at ecclesiastical reform under papal authority. The king and parliament now take up the matter. Petition of the Commons against ecclesiastical grievances. Practical reforms. The divorce question laid before the universities by Cranmer. Farther reforms. The king declared supreme head of the Church of England instead of the Pope. The king marries Annie Boleyn. The revolt of England from Rome is now completed. 182

(*h*) *Heresy still punished in England.*—There had been no change of religious creed. Heretics still persecuted, and among them *Tindal*, the translator of the New Testament. Sir Thomas More's zeal against heresy. 185

(*i*) *Execution of Sir Thomas More.*—More himself has to suffer for conscience' sake. More and Fisher sent to the Tower. Execution of Sir Thomas More and Bishop Fisher. 186

(*k*) *Death of Erasmus in* 1536.—Review of the results produced by the work of the Oxford Reformers. 190

(*l*) *Dissolution of the Monasteries and Reform of the Universities.*—The work set a-going by the Oxford Reformers goes on. Cromwell now ecclesiastical minister of Henry VIII., inquires into the state of the monasteries. Dissolution of the monasteries and destruction of shrines. Reform of the Universities. Parliament of 1529–36 dissolved. Tindal's translation of the Bible sanctioned. Martyrdom of Tindal. 191

(*m*) *Later Years of Henry VIII.*—Execution of Anne Boleyn. Henry VIII. marries Jane Seymour. A Catholic rebellion breaks out in the North, fomented by the Pope and Reginald Pole, but is quelled.

PAGE

Birth of Edward VI. and death of the queen. Henry VIII. marries Anne of Cleves, but does not like her. Cromwell sacrificed to get rid of her. Reconciliation with Charles V. Henry VIII.'s last two marriages. Alliance with Spain, and wars with France. Want of money. Death of Henry VIII. in 1547. Reform goes on during the reign of Edward VI. Catholic reaction under Queen Mary. England becomes finally Protestant under Queen Elizabeth. . 193

(*n*) *Influence of Henry VIII.'s Reign on the English Constitution.*—How far the constitution was maintained. The revolt from Rome accomplished by constitutional means. The power of Parliament maintained. It preserved its control over taxation, and over the making of new laws. On the whole, the Parliaments of Henry VIII. deserve well of Englishmen. Unjust state trials the chief blot on the reign of Henry VIII. England fared much better than France and Spain. 196

CHAPTER III.

REVOLT OF DENMARK AND SWEDEN AND (LATER) OF THE NETHERLANDS.

(*a*) *Denmark and Sweden.*—Both Denmark and Sweden throw off the yoke of Christian II. and then separate. The Swedes elect Gustavus Vasa king. Sweden, under him, becomes a Protestant nation. Denmark also, under her new king, becomes Protestant. . . 199

(*b*) *The Revolt of the Netherlands.*—Policy of Philip II. to subject the Netherlanders to Spain and to Rome. They revolt, and the 'United Provinces' become a Protestant nation. 200

CHAPTER IV.

THE GENEVAN REFORMERS.

(*a*) *Rise of a New School of Reform.*—A Protestant movement which was not national, but which influenced the Protestants of France, England, Scotland, and America more than Luther did. . . 201

(*b*) *John Calvin.*—His 'Institutes' gave logical form to the 'Calvinistic doctrines. Calvin settles at Geneva. Becomes a kind of dictator of the Genevan state. His severe discipline and intolerance. He founds schools. 202

(*c*) *Influence of the Genevan School on Western Protestantism.*—The French *Huguenots*, the Scotch *Covenanters*, the English *Puritans*, the *Pilgrim Fathers* of New England, all of the Genevan school. Their historical importance, and influence on national character. 204

CHAPTER V.

REFORM WITHIN THE CATHOLIC CHURCH.

(*a*) *The Italian Reformers.*—Efforts at Reform within the Church. Improvement in the character of Popes. The Mediating Reformers of Italy. Valdez, Pole, Contarini. Paul III. makes some of them Cardinals. Chances of a reconciliation with Protestants under Paul III. Contarini and Melanchthon try to make peace at the Diet of Ratisbon, but the Pope draws back, and Luther also. Everything left over till the Council of Trent. 205

PAGE

(*b*) *The new Order of the Society of Jesus.*—Ignatius Loyola, a Spanish knight. He is wounded in 1521. Resolves to become a general of an army of saints instead of soldiers. His austerities. Resolves to found the 'Order of Jesus.' To prepare himself, studies at the University of Paris. At Paris meets Francis Xavier. Xavier becomes a disciple, and the great Jesuit missionary to the Indies, China and Japan. Character of the Jesuits. Their success and influence. Causes of their ultimate unpopularity. 208

(*c*) *The Council of Trent.*—Council of Trent meets in 1545. The Jesuits prevail over the mediating Reformers. The Inquisition introduced into Rome by Caraffa, afterwards Pope Paul IV. The Council adjourned till 1525, under Paul IV. The Roman Catholic Church reformed in morals, but made more rigid than ever in creed. 212

CHAPTER VI.

THE FUTURE OF SPAIN AND FRANCE.

(*a*) *The Future of Spain.*—Growth of absolute monarchy in Spain. Philip II. in close league with the Papacy. Seeks to establish Spanish and Papal supremacy together. Fatal results of his policy. 214

(*b*) *The Future of France.*—Everything sacrificed to gratify the ambition of the absolute monarchy under Francis I. The curse which the absolute monarchy was to France. Struggle with the Huguenots in France. Massacre of St. Bartholomew in 1572. Toleration for a time under the Edict of Nantes. Its revocation in 1685, and the banishment of the Huguenots, who came to England. . 216

CHAPTER VII.

GENERAL RESULTS OF THE ERA OF THE PROTESTANT REVOLUTION

(*a*) *On the Growth of National Life.*—Influence of the Protestant Revolution on national life—where it succeeded—where it failed—where it partly failed and partly succeeded. 218

(*b*) *On the Relations of Nations to each other.*—Small improvement in the dealings between Nations. The Oxford Reformers not listened to in this. Henry VIII. the last English king to dream of recovering France. Hugo Grotius afterwards urges International reform. 219

(*c*) *Influence on the Growth of National Languages and Literature.* —Luther's Bible and Hymns fix the character of the German language. Influence of Calvin's writings on the French language. Influence of Tindal's New Testament on the English version of the Bible, and so upon the English language. 220

(*d*) *Effects in Stimulating National Education.*—Schools founded by Savonarola, Colet, Luther, Calvin, Knox, the Pilgrim Fathers, and the Jesuits. 222

(*e*) *Influence on Domestic Life*—Political importance of domestic life. Danger to it from the existence in a country of large celibate classes. Dissolution of monasteries and permission to the clergy to marry, a step gained for modern civilization. 223

f) *Influence on Popular Religion.*—The Protestant movement popularized religion, and strengthened individual conviction. . . 223

PAGE

(*g*) *Want of Progress in Toleration.*—Change from Catholic to Protestant creeds was change from one rigid scholastic creed to others. equally rigid. Small connection between claiming freedom of thought and conceding it to others. Persecution did not make the persecuted tolerant. Yet toleration was after all one of the ultimate results of the Protestant revolution. 225

(*h*) *The Causes why the Success of the Era was so partial.*—Progress must be gradual. Limited by the range of knowledge. Limited view of the universe. The earth still thought to be in the centre. The crystalline spheres. Heaven beyond. The motion of the spheres regarded with awe, and in popular superstition referred to angels. Astrology laughed at by some but believed in by others. Belief in visions and inspirations, and in prodigies. Universal belief in witchcraft. Witches as well as heretics burned. Barbarism of criminal law everywhere. The age not prepared for toleration. 227

(*i*) *Beginning of Progress in Scientific Inquiry.*—The range of geographical and astronomical knowledge widened. Nicolas Copernicus argues that the sun is in the centre of the universe. His great work not published till he was on his death-bed. He was followed by Tycho Brahe, Kepler and Galileo before the century was closed. 231

CHAPTER VIII.

ECONOMIC RESULTS OF THE ERA.

Results of the Era on what remained of the feudal system. In Germany, personal services continued. In France, feudal rents and payments chiefly in kind continued till 1798. In England, feudal rents were chiefly in fixed money payments. Effect of the discovery of the silver mines in the New World. The fall in the value of money caused a great rise in prices. German peasants' services not lessened by it; nor the French peasants' rents in produce, but it reduced the burden of the English peasants' rents in money to one-sixth or one-eighth of the value of the land. This would have made them peasant proprietors had they held on to their land, but their tendency was to leave their land and become labourers for wages. Change from peasant proprietorship of land and of looms to labour for wages chiefly the result of the growth of commerce and capital and the use of machinery. These changes had begun in the sixteenth century, and they completed the silent downfall of the feudal system in England. 233

CONCLUSION.

The Protestant Revolution was the beginning of a great revolutionary wave which broke in the French revolution of 1798. The movement was inevitable, and might have been peacefully met and aided by timely reforms; but the refusal of reform at the time of the crisis involved ten generations in the turmoils of revolution. . 237

MAPS.

At the beginning.

1. CHRISTENDOM, &c.
2. THE COMMERCE OF CHRISTENDOM.

At the end.

3. SERFDOM, AND REBELLIONS AGAINST IT, BEFORE 1515.
4. THE PEASANTS' WAR, 1525.

ERA

OF THE

PROTESTANT REVOLUTION.

PART I.

STATE OF CHRISTENDOM.

CHAPTER I.

INTRODUCTORY.

(*a*) *The Small Extent of Christendom.*

In the map at the beginning of this volume the light portion marks the Old World as it was known at the commencement of the era of which we have to speak.

A glance will show how small a portion of the known world belonged to Christendom—that marked *red* and *striped red*. And only the *red* part belonged to Western or Roman Christendom, with which we have mostly to do. The part *striped red* had long ago severed itself from the Western and belonged to the Eastern Church, which by the Roman was regarded as heretical and alien. Thus the Christendom of which Rome was the capital embraced only the western half of the little peninsula of Europe. And not even *all* that. For there was a little bit of Spain (marked blue) which did not belong to Christendom.

The smallness of Christendom.

Smaller than it once had been.

We may note next how much smaller Christendom was than it had once been. It had once covered not only the parts coloured red and striped red, but also those coloured dark blue, *i. e.* all Europe, Asia Minor, and the African shores of the Mediterranean Sea. But the dark blue portions had been conquered from Christendom by her great rival Mohammedan power, whose religion, though only half as old as Christianity, was thought to number many times as many adherents as there were Christians, and covered a much larger area than Christendom—all the countries marked *blue*.

The Mohammedan power.

Checked in the West.

More than 700 years—twenty generations—ago the Mohammedan Moors, after conquering the African shores of the Mediterranean, had pushed on into Spain and threatened Christendom from the West. Defeated and checked at the great battle of Tours in 732 after a struggle of 700 years they still held a foothold in Spain—the rich southern province of Granada.

But encroaching from the East.

But whilst checked in the West, Mohammedan arms had recently been encroaching more and more upon Christendom from the East. Turkey and Hungary had fallen into their hands, and in 1453, *i. e.* in the lifetime of the fathers of the men of the new era, Constantinople had been taken by the Turks. The old capital of the Eastern Roman Empire now became the capital of the great Ottoman Empire. We see then how near to Rome Turkish conquests had come. Only the Adriatic separated the Ottoman Empire from Italy. Once the Turks had even got a footing in the heel of Italy. It really seemed not unlikely that the capital of Christendom might itself some day fall into their hands.

No wonder the Turks were the terror of the Christians. And yet they had one thing in common, and it is well that we should remember it. They were worshippers of the same God. Both Christians and Mohammedans professed to trace back their faith to Abraham. Though Christendom was small and dwindling, the area of the religion inherited from Abraham was large and increasing. But this was no consolation to men to whom their fellow Christians of the Eastern Church were heretics, the 'unbelieving Jews' the objects of scorn, and the 'infidel' Turks of terror.

Kinship between Christians, Mohammedans, and Jews.

But they hate one another.

(*b*) *The Signs of New Life in Christendom.*

Christendom had never felt herself so small or so beset with enemies. And yet there were signs of a new life springing up. The new era was to be one of hope and progress.

The Crusades of the Christian nations, intended to dislodge the 'Infidel' out of Jerusalem, though they had failed in that object, had awakened Europe to new life. East and West were brought nearer together. Knights and soldiers and pilgrims brought home from new lands new thoughts and wider notions. Commerce with the East was extended. Maritime enterprise was stimulated. There was improvement in ships. The mariner's compass was discovered, and under its guidance longer voyages could safely be made. The invention of gunpowder had changed the character of war and enlarged the scale on which it was waged. The recent conquests of the Turks were indirectly the cause of new life to Christendom. The fall of Constantinople resulted in a great revival of

Influence of the Crusades.

Inventions.

Fall of Constantinople.

Revival of learning.

learning in Europe. Driven from the East, learned Greeks and Jews came to settle in Italy. Greek and Hebrew were again studied in Europe. The literature, the history, the poetry, the philosophy and arts of old Greece and Rome were revived. And the result was that a succession of poets, painters, sculptors, and historians sprang up in Christendom such as had not been known for centuries. Above all the invention of printing had come just in time to spread whatever new ideas were afloat with a rapidity never known before.

Printing.

(*c*) *The Widening of Christendom.*

So it is easy to see there were abundant signs of new life in Christendom, however small, and hemmed in, and threatened she might be. A new era was coming on, and now observe how Christendom was widened, and fresh room found for the civilization of the new era to work in.

Moors driven out of Spain.

(1) In 1491 the Moors were at last and for ever driven out of Spain by the conquest of Granada by Ferdinand and Isabella, and men felt that a turn had come in the tide of victory in favour of Christians.

Discovery of America.

(2) In 1492 came the discovery of the New World by Columbus, followed up by the Spanish conquests of Mexico and Peru, the Portuguese settlements in Brazil, and the gaining of a foothold in the New World by Sebastian Cabot for England—the embryo of those great colonies, the New England, or extension of England across the Atlantic, in which half the English people now dwell.

(3) In 1497 Vasco de Gama sailed for the first time round the Cape of Good Hope, and a new way was

opened to Asia and the East Indies, and out of this in the far future came England's Indian Empire and Australian colonies.

New way to East Indies.

Looking again at the map, and adding to the Old World the countries coloured in shadow which were brought to light mostly during the childhood of the men of the new era, we cannot wonder that they spoke of them as belonging to a '*new* world.' And bearing in mind that having reached the West Indies, knowing of no Pacific Ocean between, they thought they had reached the East Indies from the west, and so had been, as it were, *round the world*, we may realize how grand the new discoveries must have seemed to them. Men of that day did not of course realize what we know now, how wide a field these new discoveries would open for Christian civilization to extend itself into. But still they gave an immediate feeling of relief to pent-up Christendom, a spur to commerce and maritime enterprise, new light to science, new sources of wealth, and new direction to the energies of nations, and more or less to all men a sense that they were living in an age of progress and change which prepared them to look into the future with hope, and to expect great events to happen in their time.

Men's minds prepared for great events.

(*d*) *The New Era one of Progress in Civilization. In what Modern Civilization Consists.*

The work of the new era was to gain for Christendom a fresh step in the onward course of civilization.

And when we speak of advance in *civilization*, what do we mean? Not simply advance in population, wealth, luxury, but far more, that which is hid in the derivation of the word, viz., *advance in the art of living together in civil society.*

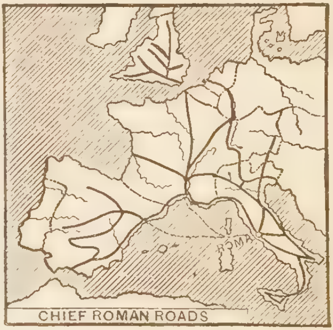
What civilization is.

And in order clearly to understand the work that was to be done in this era of progress, we must understand the difference between (1) the old form of civilization which was to be left behind and (2) the new form of civilization towards which fresh steps were to be gained.

The old Roman civilization.

(1) The old Roman civilization had come about by the conquest of the uncivilized tribes of Western Europe by the Romans, by their making the known world into one great empire, bringing all its ends together by making roads, encouraging commerce, making the Latin language understood by the educated all over it, and Rome the centre of it all. The Roman Empire was in fact a network of Roman towns, with all the threads of it drawn towards Rome. These towns were camps, from which the conquerors ruled the districts round. Little account was taken of the country people. They were looked upon as hopelessly rustic and barbarian. Under this system all the conquered countries were made provinces of the Roman Empire, not for their own but for the conquerors' good. The masses of the people were governed by Roman governors for the benefit, not of themselves, but of a small number of Roman citizens. This vice—this blot—in the Roman polity was no doubt the cause of its decay.

Its main vice.



CHIEF ROMAN ROADS

Modern civilization.

Its strength.

(2) The aim of modern civilization is obviously far higher than this. It has not yet reached its goal, but we see clearly that it has been aiming, not at one vast universal empire, but at the formation of several compact and separate nations, living peaceably side by side, respecting one another's rights and freedom; and, looking within each nation, at making all classes of the people, town and country, rich and poor, alike citizens for whose common weal the nation is to be governed, and who ultimately shall govern themselves. In this aim of modern civilization *to secure the common weal of the people* lies its power and strength.

The crisis of the struggle between the old and the new order of things.

Now the passage from the old decaying form of civilization to the new, better, and stronger one, involved a change; and this change must needs take place slowly and by degrees. The old order of things had gradually for long been going out; the new order of things had gradually for long been coming in. But in this era was to be the *crisis* of the change—the final decisive struggle between the two forces; and in this lies its importance and its interest.

Plan of this book.

Before we begin the story of this struggle, we must briefly consider what it was in the state of Christendom which brought it on; and this will be done best by our examining—

(1) The powers which belonged to the old order of things, and now dying out.

(2) The state of the modern nations which were growing up in their place.

In doing so, we shall try to lay most stress on the condition of the masses of the people; and we shall not fail to see clearly some of the main points in which, it

LIBRARY
K. C. K.

modern civilization was to go on, there was a necessity for reform, and the danger there was that, if the needful reforms were much longer withheld, there would be revolution.

Then in Part II. will come the story of the struggle; and in Part III. its results on the different nations. We shall end with trying to take stock of the amount of progress gained during the era, and to look forward at the prospects of the future that arise out of it.

CHAPTER II.

THE POWERS BELONGING TO THE OLD ORDER OF THINGS, AND GOING OUT.

(*a*) *The Ecclesiastical System.*

WESTERN CHRISTENDOM was united under one Ecclesiastical system—the Roman, or, as it called itself, the 'Holy Catholic' Church.

It was, in fact, a great Ecclesiastical Empire, of which Rome was the capital, and the Pope of Rome the head.

The Ecclesiastical Empire, and Rome the capital.

In the last generation there had been a schism—*i. e.* for a while there were two rival Popes excommunicating each other—but after much trouble and scandal the schism had been ended, and now all was one again.

Europe was mapped out into ecclesiastical provinces, at the head of each of which was an archbishop. Each province was divided into dioceses, with bishops at their head, and each diocese into parishes, each with its parish priest. Thus there was an ecclesiastical network all over Europe, all the threads of which were drawn towards

Rome, and held in the hands of the Pope and his cardinals.

Independent of the civil power.

This ecclesiastical empire kept itself as free as possible from the civil power in each nation. It considered itself above kings and princes. It was more ancient than any of their thrones and kingdoms. Kings were not secure on their thrones till they had the sanction of the Church. On the other hand the clergy claimed to be free from prosecution under the criminal laws of the lands they lived in. They struggled to keep their own ecclesiastical laws and their own ecclesiastical courts, receiving authority direct from Rome, and with final appeal, not to the Crown, but to the Pope.

The monks.

In addition to the parochial clergy, there were orders of monks. The two chief of them were the rival orders of the Dominican and Augustinian monks; and in most towns there were one, two, or half-a-dozen monasteries and cloisters. So numerous were the monks that they swarmed everywhere, and had become, by the favour of the Popes, more important and powerful in many ways than the parochial clergy.

Power of the ecclesiastical system,

It is essential to mark what a power this ecclesiastical empire wielded over the nations. The ecclesiastics held in their hands the keys, as it were, not only of heaven but of earth.

by influence over the people;

They alone baptized; they alone married people (though unmarried themselves); they alone could grant a divorce. They had the charge of men on their death-beds; they alone buried, and could refuse Christian burial in the churchyards. They alone had the disposition of the goods of deceased persons. When a man made a will, it had to be proved in their ecclesiastical courts. If men disputed their claims, doubted their teaching, or rebelled from their doctrines, they virtually condemned them to the stake, by handing them over to the civil power, which acted in submission to their dictates. You will see at once how great a power all these things must have given them over the minds, the fears, the happiness, and the lives of the people.

by its wealth;

The ordinary revenues of the clergy were large. They had a right to 'tithes;' *i. e.* to a tenth part of the produce of the whole land of Christendom. This had belonged to them for hundreds of years. In addition to this they claimed fees for everything they did.

The monks, according to the rules of their founders, ought to have got their living by begging alms in return for their preachings and their prayers for the living and the dead. But their vow of poverty had not kept them poor. People thought that by giving property to them they could save their souls; so rich men, sometimes in their lifetime but oftener on their deathbeds, left them large sums of money and estates in land. In spite of laws passed by the civil powers to prevent it, it was said that they had got about a third of the land of Europe into their possession. Thus the revenue and riches of the Church was far larger than that of the kings and princes of Europe.

by the monopoly of learning,

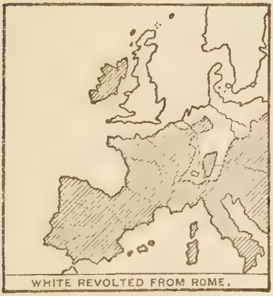
These were not the sole secrets of their power. From the fact that the clergy were almost the only educated people in Europe, they became the lawyers and diplomatists, envoys, ambassadors, ministers, chancellors, and even prime ministers of princes. They were mixed up with the politics of Europe, and the reins of the State in most countries were in the hands of ecclesiastics. They received pro·

motion to bishoprics most often in return for such political services.

and political influence,

We cannot fail to see how vast the political power of such an ecclesiastical empire as this must have been. The Pope, through his army of ecclesiastics all over Christendom, had the strings in his hand by which to influence the politics of Europe. And one of the great complaints of the best men of the day was that this political influence was used by Rome for her own ends instead of the good of Europe, and that the immense ecclesiastical revenues tended to flow out of the provinces into the coffers of the Popes and cardinals of Rome.

which all centred in Rome.


WHITE REVOLTED FROM ROME.

All this of course tended to hinder the growth and independence of the separate nations, and to prevent all classes within them from becoming united into a compact nation.

This Empire will be broken up.

It will be one great work of the era, to break up this ecclesiastical empire—to free several nations (those marked white on the map) from its yoke. So that Rome will cease to be the capital of Christendom.

(*b*) *The Scholastic System.*

There was another power in Europe which was Roman and not national; which tended to keep classes of people apart, and so stood in the way of the growth of national life in the separate nations.

The learned world was a world of its own, severed from the masses of the people by its scholastic system.

The learned world talked and wrote Latin,

All the learned men in Europe talked and wrote letters and books in Latin—the language of Rome. Some of them did not even know the common language of the countries they lived in. And as Latin was the language of learning, so Rome was the capital of the learned world. Thus the learned world was closely connected with the ecclesiastical system. Learned people were looked upon as belonging to the clergy; and the Pope had long claimed them as subjects of his ecclesiastical empire. So for centuries in England a man convicted of a crime, by pleading that he could read and write, could claim benefit of clergy, *i. e.* to be tried in an ecclesiastical court, and this by long abuse came to mean exemption from the punishments of the criminal law of the land.

and belonged to the clergy.

This tended to give to knowledge and learning itself a clerical or scholastic character. Knowledge was tied down by scholastic rules which had grown up in times when the ecclesiastics were the only educated people. The old learned men—'the schoolmen' as they were called—looked at everything with ecclesiastical eyes. All knowledge had thus got to be looked upon almost as a part of theology. Matters of science—*e. g.* whether the earth moved round the sun or the sun round the earth—were settled by texts from the Bible, instead of by examining into the facts. So there was no freedom of inquiry even in scientific matters. A man who made discoveries in science might be stopped and punished if he found out that the old schoolmen were wrong in anything.

This made learning 'scholastic,'

shackled science,

Under the scholastic system the Christian religion, which in the days of Christ and the apostles was a thing of the heart (love of God and one's neighbour), had grown into a theology—a thing of the head. The chief handybook of the theology of the schoolmen was a great folio volume of more than 1,000 pages.

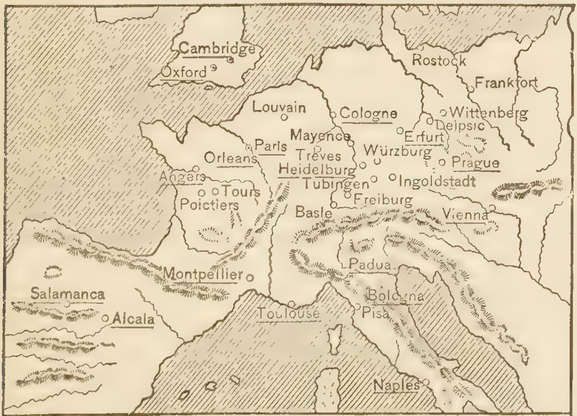
and religion also,

Thus the scholastic system necessarily kept both science and religion the property of a clerical class, and out of the hands of the common people, to whom Latin was a dead language; while at the same time it kept the learning even of the learned world shackled by scholastic rules.

and kept them from the common people.

It is important to see this clearly, because one great part of the work of the new era was to throw the gates of knowledge open to all men, and to set the minds of men free from this clerical or scholastic thraldom—to set both science and religion free, for freedom was as important to the one as it was to the other. Without it there could be no real progress in civilization.

Necessity of mental freedom.


Cambridge
Oxford
Rostock
Frankfort
Louvain
Cologne
Wittenberg
Leipsic
Erfurt
Mayence
Paris
Orleans
Treves
Würzburg
Prague
Heidelburg
Angers
Tubingen
Ingoldstadt
Tours
Poictiers
Freiburg
Basle
Vienna
Padua
Montpellier
Salamanca
Alcala
Bologna
Toulouse
Pisa
Naples

UNIVERSITIES. *Those founded before* 1400 *underlined.*

The Universities.

The universities were the great centres of the learned world.

There were thirty or forty of them scattered over Europe, and they were in more or less close connexion with each other. They are marked on the map, and the chief of them should be carefully remembered. The oldest and most celebrated were *Oxford* and *Cambridge* in England, *Paris* and *Orleans* in France, *Bologna* and *Padua* in Italy, and *Salamanca* in Spain, *Prague* in Bohemia, and *Cologne* in Germany. These, at the beginning of the era of the Reformation, were all more than a hundred, and some two hundred years old. The youngest university in Europe was that of *Wittenberg*, founded in 1502 by the Elector of Saxony.

Students pass from one to another.

Students were in the habit of passing from one university to another. Oxford students would pass on to Paris, and from Paris to Bologna, to take their degrees. And wherever there happened to be a famous professor, thither students from all other universities flocked.

Now the result of this was very important.

As one example, we may take the great movement in the fourteenth century in the direction of reform.

The result of this in the days of Wiclif.

Wiclif wrote books in Latin at Oxford. They were copied and read all over Europe. Oxford students went to the newly-opened university at Prague. Wiclif's writings made as much noise, and were as well known in Bohemia as they were in England. Huss and Jerome of Prague became the Bohemian successors of the English Wiclif, and thus the movement in favour of reform was transplanted from one country to another. What was discussed among the learned soon trickled down into the common talk of the people. So there arose out of Wiclif's movement the Lollard insurrection in England and the Hussite wars in Bohemia.

What had thus happened before in the days when books were multiplied only by the slow work of the pen was still more likely to happen again in the days of the printing press.

Will be repeated in the new era.

We shall see how in the new era these things were repeated—how the spirit of revival of learning and religious reform spread, first among the learned from university to university by students passing from one to another, now in Italy, now into England, now into Germany, and how at last it trickled down into the minds of the common people all over Europe.

The work of the era.

The fact that both the ecclesiastical system and the learned world were coextensive with Christendom, and so closely united together, gave to Christendom a unity which alone made the work of the era possible. It was as though, in spite of distance and the difficulties of travelling, learned men were nearer together than even now, in these days of railroads and steamboats and telegraphs. The work of the era was to rend Christendom asunder. Rome was no longer to be her capital. The Pope was no longer to be recognized everywhere as her spiritual head. The Latin language was no longer to be the common tongue of literature and books all over Europe. Young nations were to divide Europe between them, to have their own churches and clergy, their own languages, their own literature, their own learned men and universities, and so to become more independent of each other and of Rome. And this was one of the stages through which Christian civilization was to pass in its onward course.

(*c*) *The Feudal System and the forces which were breaking it up.*

There was another system which was opposed to the growth of modern nations—the feudal system. It belonged to the old order of things, and was fast decaying and going out.

The feudal system.

Divided countries into petty lordships.

The feudal system hindered the growth of free nations, not by tending too much to keep up the unity of Christendom, but by dividing countries up into innumerable petty lordships.

Each feudal lord was a little sovereign both as regards those below him—his vassals and serfs—and also as regards his fellows, except so far as he and they were controlled by higher feudal powers above them. He waged what petty wars he chose with his neighbours, and lorded it over his vassals and serfs, whilst himself very jealously resisting any unusual interference from powers above him.

Decay of the feudal system.

The feudal system had already shown signs of falling to pieces, and in some countries had very much died out.

In some countries the petty lordships had fallen quite under the power of the Crown.

Subjection of feudal lords to the Crown.

By a long process, some of the feudal lords had grown in power, while the multitude of smaller ones had sunk into ever-increasing insignificance. Especially in countries where by the rule of inheritance lordships descended only to the eldest male heir, there was a natural tendency for lordships to unite by marriage and inheritance. The greater families intermarried and grew richer, and the royal family was in fact the one which had grown so much bigger than the rest that it kept swallowing up more and more into itself. We shall see that it was so notably in France. The process went on more slowly in Germany, where the rule of inheritance was division among the male heirs, and so the tendency was towards more and more division, and an ever-increasing host of petty lordships. In Germany the feudal system was still in full force, and we shall see by-and-by how it prevented her from growing into a compact nation, and how much she had to suffer for want of the nobles being subjected to a central authority able to preserve the public peace and to curb their lawlessness and tyranny. But speaking generally, things were more and more working in the new era towards the complete subjection of the feudal nobility in each nation to the central power, *i. e.* towards the supremacy of the Crown.

Increasing power of the crown.

But *commerce* was breaking up the feudal system faster than anything else, and commerce had its chief seat in the towns. Trade, commerce, and manufactures were the life of the towns. The little towns were the markets of the country round, and their trade lay between the peasantry and the bigger towns. These, in their turn, lived upon the share they had in that wider commerce of the world, of which, by the aid of Map No. 2 (at the beginning of this volume), we must now try to grasp the main features.

The growth of commerce.

The Crusades had done much to open up a commerce between Asia and Europe. This commerce with the East was mostly in the hands of the great cities on the Mediterranean Sea. The new way to the Indies was not yet open. The products of the East, its spices and its silks, were carried overland from the Persian Gulf and Red Sea to the Levant, and then shipped to the ports of Italy. Silk manufactures were also carried on in Italy, in Catalonia in Spain, and

Trade of the Mediterranean.

at Lyons in France. These eastern products and silks were the chief exports of the Mediterranean merchants.

The commerce of the North Sea was equally important.

The woollen manufactures of the north were its chief feature. Spain exported wool and some parts of Germany, but England was the great wool-growing country. The wool was woven into cloth in the looms of the eastern counties of England, and Flanders on the opposite shore of the North Sea. These were the chief manufacturing districts, though other towns in England, up the Rhine, and in Germany, had their weavers also. There were also considerable linen manufactures in the north of France.

The manufacturing districts.

The North Sea was the great fishing ground, and dried fish was a great article of commerce when during Lent and on every Friday all Christendom lived upon fish.

The fisheries.

There was also a trade in furs and skins with North Russia, Norway, and Sweden.

This commerce of the North was carried on by the Hanse towns—reaching from the shores of the Baltic westward to the Netherlands, and inland in Germany as far south as Cologne. There were eighty towns belonging to this league, and they had stations or factories at Novgorod, Bergen, London, and Bruges.

The commerce of the Hanse towns.

Bruges in Flanders had been, and now Antwerp was the great central mart of the commerce of the world. Here the merchants of the North exchanged their goods with the merchants of the Mediterranean. Here their ships met and divided the maritime commerce of the world between them. Here, too, the maritime met the inland and overland trade—inland trade with the German

Bruges and Antwerp the central marts of commerce.

towns, overland trade down the Rhine, through Germany, over the Alps, by the Brenner and Julier passes into Italy. There was much trade between German and Venetian merchants, and the contemporary historian, Machiavelli, states that all Italy was in a manner supplied with the commodities and manufactures of Germany. Since the Netherlands and Austria fell into the hands of the House of Hapsburg, and Maximilian was Emperor of Germany, there had also naturally sprung up a trade between the Rhine and the Danube.

Lines of maritime, inland, and overland trade.

These were the great lines of trade, and in these lines lay the chief commercial towns, living on their share in the commerce of the world.

Under the feudal system the towns had once been mostly subject to feudal lords, but they had early shown their independent spirit, and rebelled, or bargained for charters of freedom. A free town was a little republic, organized for protection from foes without and for peaceful trade within. The members of each trade were banded together into guilds for mutual protection, and there was generally a sort of representative government—an upper and lower council of citizens, by whom the town was governed.

The towns had mostly got free.

We can easily understand how likely the towns were to hate the feudal lords, whose petty wars disturbed the public peace and made commerce hazardous. They had to fortify themselves against these petty wars, and their cavalcades of merchandize had to be protected by soldiers on the roads. So there had grown up out of commerce an anti-feudal power in Europe. In almost every country the towns banded themselves together against the feudal system, and when the power of the

Why the towns hated feudalism

and favored the Crown.

Crown began to rise, the towns were the stepping-stones by which it rose to the top. Kings invited the towns to send burgesses to the national Diets or Parliaments, and they were a growing power in almost every State.

There was yet another most numerous and most important class affected by feudalism—the peasantry.

The feudal peasantry.

The peasants, under the feudal system, were more or less reduced to a condition of vassalage or serfdom.

Let us understand what this was. The tribes who conquered Northern and Western Europe were a land-folk—people living by the land. They settled in villages, and all the land belonging to each village belonged to the community, as it does now in Swiss valleys. The people were tenants only of their little allotments, with common rights over the unallotted pasture, woods, forests, and rivers: *i. e.* they had a common or joint use of them.

Once more free than under the feudal system.

Now the feudal system had put the feudal lords in the place of the community. The peasantry became tenants of these lords, paying rents sometimes in money, but chiefly in services of labour on their lords' lands. The lords, moreover, claimed more and more of the unallotted portion of the common lands as their own. The serfs were not allowed to leave their land, because it would rob the lords of their services. So the lords held their peasantry completely in their power. This was feudal serfdom when in full force. In some countries it was still in force, in others it had almost disappeared.

Where the central power was weakest, feudal serfdom lingered longest.

In those countries where the lords were most subjected to the Crown, as in France and England, the serfs were likely to be best off and farthest advanced on the road to freedom. In those in which the feudal lords were least subdued, and the central power least formed, as in Germany, we should expect to find feudal serfdom lingering on. And it was so.

The towns and commerce favoured freedom of the peasantry.

As the towns were the enemies of the feudal nobility, so they were the friends of the feudal peasantry. Commerce introduced everywhere money payments instead of barter. Payment of rent in services of labour was an old-fashioned kind of barter. Commerce, therefore, helped to introduce money rents and money wages, and where these were early introduced, as in France and England, the condition of the peasant was much improved. But more than this; labour was often wanted in the towns: the wages paid in the towns often tempted the peasant to desert his land and feudal lord, and to flee to a town. The towns favoured this immigration into them of runaway serfs, and there grew up in some countries a settled rule of law that after residence in a town a year and a day they could not be reclaimed.

Thus we see clearly how the feudal system was breaking up under the influence of commerce and the combined power of the towns and the Crown.

The petty lordships were becoming united into the larger unit of the nation, but we see on the other hand what a danger there was of the nation becoming divided into hostile *classes*. How were classes so contrarient as the feudal lords, the townspeople, and the peasantry, to be blended in one national life? This was the great problem modern civilization had to solve, and some nations succeeded much better than others in solving it.

CHAPTER III.

THE MODERN NATIONS WHICH WERE RISING INTO POWER.

(*a*) *Italy.*

Not a united nation.

No country had made less progress towards becoming a compact and united nation than Italy, the very country in which Rome, the capital of Christendom, exercised most influence.

Rome, according to Machiavelli, the cause of her disunity.

The contemporary historian, *Machiavelli*, shows how Rome was the cause of Italy's ruin and disunity.

He says: 'Some are of opinion that the welfare of Italy depends upon the Church of Rome. I shall set down two unanswerable reasons to the contrary:—

'(1) By the corrupt example of that court Italy has lost its religion and become heathenish and irreligious.

'(2) We owe to Rome also that we are become divided and factious, which must of necessity be our ruin, for no nation was ever happy or united unless under the rule of one commonwealth or prince, as France and Spain are at this time. And the reason is that the Pope, though he claims temporal as well as spiritual jurisdiction, is not strong enough to rule all Italy himself, and whenever he sees any danger he calls in some foreign potentate to help him against any other power growing strong enough to be formidable. Therefore it is that, instead of getting united under one rule, Italy is split up into several principalities, and so disunited that it falls easily a prey to the power not only of the barbarians, but of any one who cares to invade it. This misfortune we Italians owe only to the Church of Rome.'

That these words of Machiavelli were too strictly true, we shall judge from the facts.

We have seen what was the power of Rome. If exerted in favour of Christian civilization how many blessings might not the Church have earned! But it was notorious to every one living at the time that Rome used her power so ill, and that her own character and that of her Popes were so evil, that she had become both politically and spiritually the centre of wickedness and rottenness in Europe and especially in Italy.

Rome a centre of rottenness.

And this was no new thing. Men had been complaining of it for generations. The greatest poets of Italy had long before immortalized the guilt of Rome. Two centuries before, Dante had described the Popes of his day as men

Dante on the Popes.

> whose avarice
> O'ercasts the world with mourning, under foot
> Treading the good, and raising bad men up.
> Of Shepherds like to you, the Evangelist
> Was ware, when her who sits upon the waves
> With kings in filthy whoredom he beheld!

And soon after Dante, Petrarch had described Rome thus:—

Petrarch on Rome.

> Once Rome! now false and guilty Babylon!
> Hive of deceits! Terrible prison,
> Where the good doth die, the bad is fed and fattened!
> Hell of the living! . . . .
> Sad world that dost endure it! Cast her out!

And in the days of these great poets men, Reformers and Councils too, had tried to reform Rome, but without avail. A few more generations had passed and Rome was now not only unreformed but in respect to morals worse than ever. How much worse we know not only from the censures of her poets, but from the facts of her contemporary historians.

Recent Popes bad men.

The Popes of Rome had for long not only wielded both political and spiritual power, but used them to enrich their own families; and as a rule they had recently been notoriously bad men.

Alexander VI. and Cæsar Borgia.

Alexander VI. was the reigning Pope, and the worst Rome ever had. His wicked reign lasted from 1492 to 1503. His great aim was to bring Rome, and if he could, all Italy, into the hands of his still wickeder son Cæsar Borgia. The latter caused his own brother to be stabbed and thrown into the Tiber. He had his brother-in-law assassinated on his palace-steps. He stabbed one of his father's favourites who had taken shelter under the pontifical robes, so that the blood spirted into the Pope's face. Rich men were poisoned to get their wealth. The reign of these Borgias was a reign of terror in Rome. At last, in 1503, the Pope fell, it is said, into his own trap, and died of the poison he had prepared for another.

Their crimes.

Another great Italian historian of the time, *Guicciardini*, records that the body of the Pope, black and loathsome, was exposed to public view in St. Peter's. And he goes on to say:—

"All Rome flocked to that sight, and could not sufficiently satiate their eyes with gazing on the remains of the extinct serpent, who by his immoderate ambition, pestiferous perfidy, monstrous lust, and every sort of horrible cruelty and unexampled avarice—selling without distinction property sacred and profane—had compassed the destruction of so many by poison, and was now become its victim!'

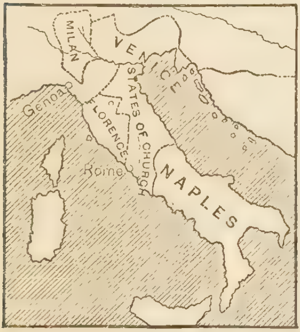
Effects of the Pope's wickedness.

Machiavelli was right then, that the example of Rome in Italy was an evil one. That it made the Italians hate the Church, and drove thinking men, while they remained superstitious, to doubt Christianity, and to welcome even Pagan religions, because they seemed so much purer than that which Rome offered them, we shall see by-and-by. This is what he meant when he spoke of the Italians becoming 'heathenish'—it was exactly the fact.

Main divisions of Italy.

And now as to this other statement, that Rome was the cause of the divisions, and therefore of the ruin of Italy; this also, the facts of the recent history of Italy will make clear.

The map shows how Italy was in the main divided—Venice, Milan, and Florence to the north; Naples to the south; the States of the Church between.



Papal States.

(1) *The States of the Church.* Over these the Popes had a shadowy kind of rule, but they were made up of petty lordships and cities, claiming independence, and even Rome was ruled by its Barons rather than by the Popes; or to speak more correctly the Barons and the Pope were always quarrelling which of the two should rule. The Pope lived in his strong castle of St. Angelo, close by the city.

(2) *Venice* was a commercial city, 1,000 years old, ruled by its nobles and possessing territory like ancient

Venice.

Rome, ruled for the benefit of its citizens rather than its subjects.

(3) *Florence* was also a commercial republic, but not governed by its nobles. It was a democratic republic, but one family of citizens—the Medici—had grown by trade richer than the rest, and usurped almost despotic power. It also possessed considerable territory.

Florence.

(4) *Milan* was a State to which there were many rival claims. The King of France, as Duke of Orleans, claimed it by inheritance from the last Duke of Milan. The King of Naples (and Spain through him) also had a claim, and the Emperor of Germany claimed it as having reverted to the Empire. Meanwhile the *Sforza* family had possession, and kept it off and on till 1512.

Milan.

(5) *Naples* was also a State to which there were rival claims. Its nobles had usurped almost uncontrolled power. The right to feudal sovereignty over it was disputed between the Counts of Anjou (France) and the King of Arragon (Spain). The latter had long had possession, and it had descended to a bastard branch of that house.

Naples.

That the Popes were continually fomenting quarrels between these Italian States and bringing 'barbarian' princes to fight their battles on Italian soil, a few facts will show.

Alexander VI. and Cæsar Borgia first stirred up *Venice* and *Milan* against *Naples*. Then they invited Charles VIII. of *France*, who in 1494 crossed the Alps, overturned the Medici at Florence, and entered Naples in 1495. Then in 1495 the *Pope*, *Venice*, and *Milan* joined with Ferdinand of *Spain* in turning the *French* out of Naples again.

In 1500 Louis XII. of France took Milan, and then he and Ferdinand of *Spain* jointly invaded *Naples*. But they quarrelled, and *Spain*, under Gonsalvo de Cordova, defeated the *French*, and so Ferdinand became King of Naples, and (having Sardinia and Sicily before) of the two Sicilies in 1505.

Papal politics the ruin of Italy.

In 1503 Julius II. became Pope, and devoted his ten years' reign to constant war. In 1509 he, *France*, *Spain*, and *Germany* formed the *League* of Cambray against *Venice*. But the robbers quarrelled on the eve of victory, and so Venice was not ruined.

In 1511 Louis XII. of *France* tried to get Henry VIII. of *England* to join him in deposing Julius II. But Julius succeeded in getting *England* and *Spain* and *Germany* to join his 'Holy League' against *France*.

After driving Louis XII. of *France* out of Italy, Julius II. died in 1513, and was succeeded by Leo X.

(*b*) *Germany.*

Next to Italy, Germany was furthest of all modern nations from having attained national unity. The German, or, as it called itself, 'the Holy Roman' Empire, was a power which belonged to the old order of things. Like the Pope of Rome, the Emperor considered himself as the head of Christendom. He called himself 'Cæsar,' and 'King of Rome;' and, as successor to the Roman Empire, which the Germans had conquered, claimed not only a feudal chieftainship over nations of German origin, but also a sort of vague sovereignty over all lands. As the Pope of Rome was the spiritual head, so the Emperor considered himself the 'temporal head of all Christian people.'

Had not yet attained national unity.

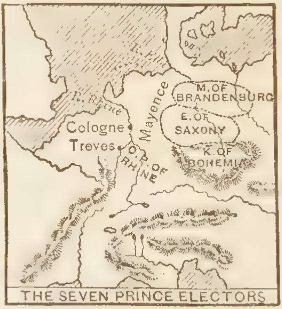
The Emperor claimed to be Cæsar and King of Rome.

His claim to universal empire very shadowy.

Switzerland had indeed severed herself from the German Empire. England, Spain, and France had never properly belonged to it. But the French king had neverthe less sometimes sworn fealty to the Empire; and even Henry VIII. of England, when it suited his purpose (*i. e.* when he wanted to be Emperor!) took care to point out to the Electors that while his rival, Francis I. of France, was a foreigner, in electing an English Emperor, they would not be departing from the *German tongue.* On other occasions he took care to insist that England, however Saxon in her speech, had never been subject to the Empire. So the claim to universal sovereignty was very shadowy indeed.

How elected.

When a vacancy occurred, the new Emperor was elected under the 'Golden Bull' of 1356, by seven Prince Electors, viz.: [On the Rhine]. The three Archbishops of *Mayence*, *Treves*, and *Cologne*, and the Count Palatine of the Rhine. [On the Elbe]. The king of *Bohemia*, the Elector of *Saxony*, the Margrave of *Brandenburg*.



THE SEVEN PRINCE ELECTORS

The feudal ceremony.

The ceremony of coronation showed the feudal nature of the Empire. When elected, the Emperor attended high mass. Then the Archbishop of Mayence, assisted by Cologne and Treves, demanded of him, 'Will you maintain the Catholic faith?' 'I will.' Then he demanded of his brother electors, 'Will you recognize the elected as

Emperor?' 'So be it.' Then he was robed in the robes, girt with the sword, and crowned with the crown of Charlemagne. Then came the banquet. The King of Bohemia, in true feudal fashion, was the imperial cupbearer; the Count Palatine carved the first slice from the roasted ox; the Duke of Saxony rode up to his stirrups into a heap of oats, and filled a measure with grain for his lord; and lastly, the Margrave of Brandenburg rode to a fountain and filled the imperial ewer with water.

When elected, the Emperor had little real power in Germany; and, indeed, as time went on he seemed to have less and less.

No imperial domains.

Once large domains had belonged to the Emperor: some in Italy, some on the Rhine. But former emperors had lost or ceded the Italian estates to Italian nobles and cities during struggles with the Popes; while those on the Rhine had been handed over to the Archbishops of Mayence, Treves, and Cologne, who were Electors, to secure votes and political support. For some generations there had been no imperial domains at all; not an inch of territory in Germany or Italy came to the Emperor with his imperial crown. The Emperor was therefore reduced to a mere feudal headship.

Small imperial power.

Nor had the Emperor, as feudal head, much power in Germany. He found it very hard to get troops or money from the German people. *Maximilian*, the reigning Emperor, was notoriously poor, and declared that the Pope drew a hundred times larger revenue out of Germany than he did. He was a powerful sovereign in Europe because he was head of the Austrian house of Hapsburg, which was rising into great power in Europe by its alliances.

Already possessed of Austria and Bohemia, Maximilian had married Mary of Burgundy, and the Netherlands. His son Philip thus was heir-apparent to those provinces as well as Austria. Philip married Joanna, daughter of Isabella of Spain; and so their son Charles became heir to Spain also. Thus was the House of Hapsburg pushing itself into power and influence. The German Empire was the crowning symbol of their power rather than the reason of it. In the case of Maximilian, it was the power of Austria that made the German Emperor great. By-and-by, as we shall see, when Charles V. of Austria, Spain, and the Netherlands rises to the Empire and becomes the most powerful prince in Europe, it is by Spain, not Germany, that he wields his still greater influence.

The Emperor Maximilian, of the Austrian House of Hapsburg.

Charles V.

The power of the Emperor was far less in Germany than in his own domains, for in Germany his power was checked by the Diet or feudal parliament of the Empire. The Diet was a feudal, not a representative parliament; *i. e.* only the Emperor's feudal vassals had a claim to attend and vote in it.

The Diets.

The Diet met and voted in three separate houses:

1. The Electors (except the King of Bohemia, who had no voice except in the election of an Emperor).
2. The Princes, lay and ecclesiastical.
3. The Free Imperial Cities (*i. e.* those cities which held direct of the Emperor).

The Electors and Princes had most power. Only what was agreed upon by them was last of all submitted to the House of Cities. To secure the carrying out of the decrees of the Diets, there had also recently been some attempts at an organization of the Empire. It was divided in circles for the

No power to enforce their decrees.

maintenance of order; but this, though plausible on paper, had little effect in reality, because the Diets had no real power to enforce their decrees.

The feudal system still prevailed.

Germany was, in fact, still under the feudal system—still divided up into petty lordships—more so than perhaps any other country; certainly more so than England, Spain, or France.

Subdivision of lordships by law of inheritance.

One reason for this was, as we have seen, that the German law of inheritance divided the lordships between the sons of a feudal lord on his death; so there was constant subdivision, and in consequence an ever-increasing host of petty sovereignties.

Constant petty feuds.

The mass of the feudal lords were petty and poor, and yet proud and independent, resisting any attempts of the powers above them, whether Emperor, or Diets, or Princes, to control them. They claimed the right of waging war; and, by their petty feuds, the public peace was always being broken.

They lived a wild barbarian life in times of peace (*i. e.* when not at feud with some neighbouring lord), devoted to the chase, trampling over their tenants' crops, scouring the woods with their retainers and their dogs. In times of war and feuds, with helmets, breastplates, and cross-bows they lay in ambush in the forests watching an enemy, or fell upon a train of merchants on the roads from some town or city with which they had a quarrel. They became as wild and lawless as the wolves.

Lawlessness of the knights.

Götz von Berlichingen (popularly known as 'Götz with the Iron Hand'), and Franz von Sickingen were types of this wild knighthood. They were champions of fist-law (faust-recht). They called it private war, but it was often plunder and pillage by which they lived. Götz was indeed more like the head of a band of robbers than anything else. He one day saw a pack of wolves fall upon a flock of sheep. 'Good luck, dear comrades,' said Götz, 'good luck to *us* all and everywhere!' These lawless knights were indeed like wolves, and, just as much as the wild animals they hunted, belonged to the old order of things, which must go out to make way for advancing civilization.

The towns of Germany.

The free towns of Germany were her real strength. The citizens were thrifty, earned much by their commerce, spent little, and so saved much. Each city was a little free state (for they had mostly thrown off their feudal lords), self-governed, like a little republic, fortified, well stored with money in its treasury, a year's provisions and firing often stored up against a siege. The little towns were of course dependent in part on the peasantry round, buying their corn, and in return supplying them with manufactured goods. But the bigger towns lived by a wider commerce, and held their heads above the peasantry. Above all, they hated the feudal lords, whose feuds and petty wars and lawless deeds put their commerce in peril. Two hundred years ago, sixty towns on the Rhine had leagued themselves together to protect their commerce. After that had come the league[1] of the Hanse Towns, chiefly in the North of Germany, but including Cologne and twenty-nine adjacent towns, and aiming at defending commerce from robberies by land as well as piracy by sea.

Their leagues for mutual defence.

They had to form these leagues because Germany was divided and without a real head—not yet a nation—

---

[1] See the Map of Commerce.

Want of a central power to maintain the public peace.

though all that was good and great in it was sighing for more national life, for a central representative power strong enough to maintain the public peace, but hitherto sighing in vain, finding in her Emperor little more help than Italy found in her Pope.

The condition of the peasantry growing harder and harder for want of a central power.

No class in Germany had suffered more from want of a central power than the peasantry. They still were in feudal serfdom. While in other countries, where there was a well-established central government, the lot of the peasantry had improved and serfdom almost been got rid of, here in Germany their lot had grown harder and harder for want of it.

The German peasant, or '*Bauer*,' was still a feudal tenant. In many ways he was no doubt better off than a labourer for wages. His house was no mere labourer's cottage—it was a little farm. He had about him his land and his live stock, his barn and his stack. Under the same roof with his family his cows and pigs lay upon their straw and he upon his bed. On the raised cooking hearth the wood crackled under the great iron pot hung on its rack from the chimney-hood above, while saucepans and gridirons, pewter dishes and pitchers with their pewter lids were hung upon the walls; the oak table and coffee were heirlooms with his house and his land. In mere outward comforts many a free peasant, working for wages and having no land to till for himself, would gladly have changed places with him; but behind all was his thraldom to his feudal lord.

History of the German 'Bauer.'

He had traditions of old and better days, when he was far more free, when his services were not so hard and the exactions of his lord not so great. But in the fourteenth century the Black Death had thinned the population of Germany and made labour scarce. In other countries, where the law of the land had fixed the amount of the services, and where the influence of commerce had substituted money-payments for services, this scarcity of labour strengthened the peasant in his struggle for freedom. But in Germany, where there was no law to step in, and where services continued, the scarcity of labour was only likely to make the lords insist all the more upon their performance; and so they had encroached more and more on the peasants' rights, enacted more and more labour from them, increased their burdens, robbed them more and more of their common rights over the pastures, the wild game, and the fish in the rivers, grown more and more insolent, till the peasants in some places had sunk almost into slavery. It was galling to them to have to work for their lords in fine weather, and to have to steal in their own little crops on rainy days. Small a thing as it might be, perhaps it was still more galling to receive orders on holidays to turn out and gather wild strawberries for the folks at the Castle. Hard, too, it seemed to them when, on the death of a peasant, the lord's agent came and carried off from the widow's home the *heriot* or 'best chattel,' according to the feudal custom—perhaps the horse or the cow on which the family was dependent.

Rebellion his only remedy.

But however bad a pass things might come to, there was no remedy—no law of the land to appeal to against the encroachments of their lords. The Roman civil law had indeed been brought in by the ecclesiastics, and the lords favoured it because it tended to regard serfs as slaves. The serfs naturally hated it because it hardened their lot. There was no good in appealing to it. It was one of their grievances. So the peasants of each place must fight it out with their own lords. They must rebel or submit, waiting for better days, if ever these should come!

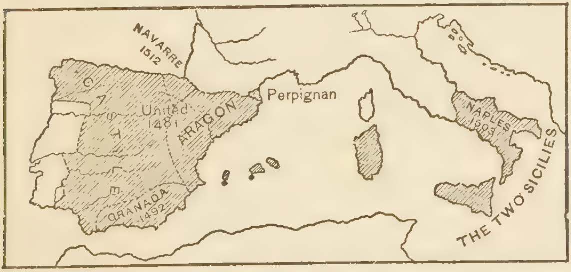
(*c*) *Spain.*

Spain was destined to become the first power in Europe. She rapidly grew into a united nation, and during the era attained the highest point of power and prosperity she ever reached; but she fell soon after from the pinnacle on which she then stood, and has never since risen again so high.

Becoming the first power in Europe.

Ever since the conquest of Spain by the Goths and Vandals, in the eighth century, it had been a feudal nation; and, as in most other feudal countries, the power had got into the hands of the feudal lords or nobles. But Spain was singular in this, that it had passed under a long period of Mohammedan rule.

Power of the nobles.



By the invasions of the Moors the feudal chiefs of Spain had been driven up into the mountains of the north, while probably the peasantry mostly remained in the conquered country, subject to the Moors. By slow degrees the feudal chiefs reconquered the northern provinces till the Moors

Driven into the north by the Moors.

retained only the rich southern provinces; and as bit after bit was reconquered by the nobles, it became a little independent state under the feudal chief who reconquered it.

Reconquest of Spain from the Moors, except Granada.

Already, however, there had grown up in Spain the three kingdoms of Castile, Arragon, and Navarre, favoured by the influence of the towns. Owing to the constant struggles going on there had been for long no safety except in the towns. These had further grown in power and importance by trade and manufactures, and had become little states—like little Venices— each with its independent government.

Kingdoms of Castile and Arragon

Both in Castile and Arragon the monarch was scarcely more powerful than the Emperor in Germany. His power was controlled by the Cortes or parliament, at which met the nobles, deputies from the towns, and clergy. And to the Cortes belonged the power of levying taxes and enacting laws.

united under Ferdinand and Isabella.

Spain becomes more and more absolute.

Such was the state of things when, by the marriage of Ferdinand of Castile to Isabella of Arragon (in 1481), all Spain, except Navarre and Granada, was united under one monarchy, and from this time the tendency was for the throne to become more and more absolute. It was one of the first objects of Ferdinand and Isabella to extend the power of the monarchy.

Spain had found, as the Germans had found, that without some central power it was hard to keep the peace, to protect trade and commerce, and to put down robbery and crime. The cities had united in a 'Holy Brotherhood' for this purpose, and Ferdinand sided with them in this object. But what more than anything else counteracted the feudal tendency to separate into little petty states, and to strengthen the national feeling and make it rally round the common centre of the throne, was the war long waged by Ferdinand, and at length successful, against the last stronghold of the Moors in Granada. In 1492 Granada was taken, the 700 years' struggle ended, and the Moors driven forever out of Spain. Thus was all Spain (except the little state of Navarre, under shelter of the Pyrenees) united in one nation. The modern kingdom of Spain, thus formed, rose up at once to be one of the first powers of Europe.

Conquest of Granada.

We have already seen how Charles VIII. of France had been invited by Pope Alexander VI. to conquer Naples. As a bribe to keep Ferdinand (who had a rival claim on Naples) quiet while he went on this raid on Naples, he had ceded to Ferdinand the little state of *Perpignan*, on the Spanish side of the Pyrenees. Ferdinand was intent on the completion of the kingdom of Spain, and took the bribe. We shall soon find him (in 1512) obtaining possession of Navarre. In the meantime the result of the Italian wars was that he got hold of Naples; and having the islands of Sardinia and Sicily already, he became King of the 'Two Sicilies,' as well as of Spain.

Ferdinand's policy to complete Spain.

Another fact added to the power of Spain. It was under Spanish auspices that Columbus discovered America. This not only threw the gold of the mines of Peru into the treasuries of Spain; it added another great laurel to her fame. It was Spain that had driven the Moors out of Western Europe; it was Spain that enlarged Christendom by the discovery of the New World.

Columbus.

Foreign policy. Marriages.

The foreign policy of princes in those days was very much influenced by the marriages they planned and effected for their children.

Ferdinand's first aim was to get all the Spanish Peninsula under the power of the Spanish Crown. So he married his eldest daughter to the King of Portugal, in hopes of some day uniting the two Crowns. This came to pass in the person of Philip II., the husband of the English Queen Mary.

His next policy was to ally himself with such foreign powers as would best help him to secure his ends. There were two reasons why he did not ally himself with France. France was his rival in Italy. He had fought with France for Naples, and meant to keep it. He also wanted Navarre to complete the Spanish kingdom. France claimed it also. The aim of Spanish foreign policy was, therefore, to work against France.

By the marriage of his daughter *Catherine* to the King of England, and *Joanna* to the heir of the rising Austrian House of Hapsburg, who held the Netherlands, and whose head, Maximilian I., was Emperor of Germany, he connected himself with the two powers who, like himself, were jealous of France—*England*, because part of France had so long been claimed as belonging to the English Crown—the *House of Hapsburg*, because France had got hold of part of Burgundy (which formerly belonged to the same Burgundian kingdom as the Netherlands).

Success of these alliances.

And on the whole, though his schemes did not prosper in his lifetime, they did succeed in making Spain the first power in Europe during the next reign.

When Queen Isabella died, Joanna became Queen of

Castile. She, however, was insane, and her husband Philip dying soon after, Ferdinand held the reins of Castile in her name as Regent. On his death, in 1516, Castile and Arragon were again united, under Charles V., and Spain became greater than ever.

Domestic policy.

The domestic policy of Ferdinand and Isabella had also for its object the consolidation of Spain under their throne. Their great minister was Cardinal Ximenes, whose policy was to strengthen the central power of the Crown by engaging all Spain in a *national* war against the Moors, and by strengthening the towns (or loyal element) at the expense of the feudal nobles (the disloyal element, in Spain as elsewhere). The subjugation of the nobles to the Crown was in a great measure effected, and the Crown became more and more absolute.

Subjugation of the nobles.

The Inquisition.

Not content with driving out of Spain the last remnant of the Mohammedan Moors, the Catholic zeal of the king and queen and Ximenes turned itself against the Jews and heretics. They founded the '*Inquisition*' in Spain, which in a generation burned thousands of heretics. They expelled, it is said, more than 100,000 Jews from their Spanish homes. These first took refuge in Portugal, and soon after, driven from thence, were scattered over Europe.

Banishment of the Jews.

But notwithstanding this zeal for the Catholic faith, by which Ferdinand and Isabella earned the title of '*the Catholic*,' there was no notion in the minds of Ximenes or his royal master and mistress to sacrifice Spain to Rome. They were as zealous in reforming the morals of the clergy and monks as in rooting out heresy. They demanded from the Pope bulls enabling them to visit and

THE THREE DAUGHTERS OF FERDINAND AND ISABELLA, AND THEIR ALLIANCES.

FERDINAND King of Arragon *m.* ISABELLA Queen of Castile
[*This marriage united Castile and Arragon under the Spanish crown.*] (See Map of Spain, p. 34.)

ISABELLA *m.* Emanuel, King of Portugal
[*This marriage was intended to unite Spain and Portugal, and did do so under Philip II.*]

JOANNA *m.* Philip of Austria
[*Joanna was insane, and this marriage was intended to secure the union under the Spanish crown of the Austrian and Burgundian dominions. Philip, son of the Emperor Maximilian, who was head of the House of Hapsburg, inherited the Burgundian provinces (including the Netherlands) from his mother Mary of Burgundy. This marriage united Spain, Austria, and the Burgundian provinces under Charles V., who also became Emperor of Germany and King of Italy.*]

CATHERINE *m.* Henry VIII. of England
[*This marriage was intended to unite Spain and England in alliance against France. And so it did till the breach with Charles V., on his marriage with Isabella of Portugal instead of the Princess Mary. Whereupon Henry VIII. divorced Catherine, and this led to the revolt of England from Rome.*]

Heir-apparent of Spain and Portugal, died young.

ISABELLA *m.* CHARLES V. Emperor of Germany
[*Charles V. during the Spanish alliance with England was to have married the English Princess (afterwards queen) Mary. This marriage broke up the alliance between Spain and England.*]

FERDINAND Archduke of Austria

PHILIP II. of Spain and Portugal *m.* MARY, Queen of England
[*This marriage marked the reaction in England from the policy of Henry VIII.; the return to the Spanish alliance, and to allegiance to Rome. The reaction lasted till the death of Mary. Then under Elizabeth England again revolted from Rome. Whereupon Philip II. sent the ill-fated Spanish Armada against England. The Netherlands revolted from the Spanish rule of Philip II., and thus commenced the reaction against the supremacy of Spain in Europe.*]

[A careful study of this page, and a reference back to it during the perusal of this volume, will be found a useful aid to the memory.]

reform the monasteries. They claimed the right in many cases of appointing their own bishops. And when the scandals of Alexander VI.'s wicked reign came to their knowledge, they threatened to combine with other sovereigns in his '*correction.*'

Independent policy towards Rome.

One other thing we must notice. The discoveries of Columbus, followed up by the conquest of Mexico and Peru, gave to Spain suddenly a colonial empire to govern. Her colonies in the New World were in one sense the gem in her Crown. Her dreams of wealth in gold and silver were more than realized. To have extended *Christendom* into a new world seemed in itself a worthy exploit to the Catholic zeal of Queen Isabella. Her royal anxiety to convert the heathen inhabitants of the new-found lands to the Catholic faith was no doubt as genuine as her anxiety to root heresy out of Spain.

Colonial policy.

She sent out Catholic missionaries, but the selfishness of her Spanish colonists introduced slavery instead of Christianity. In these first Spanish colonies was begun that cruel policy by which the native races were exterminated—worked to death—and then African negroes introduced to supply their place. The introduction of slavery, and its necessary feeder—the slave trade—was a blot upon the colonial policy, not only of Spain but of Christendom. It was essentially contrary to the genius of modern civilization, and we know how great a struggle has been needful in our own times to prevent its ruining the greatest of the colonies of the New World.

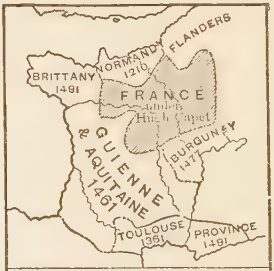
Slavery.

(*d*) *France.*

Machiavelli says, 'The kings of France are at this time more rich and powerful than ever.' So they were.

How all France had grown into one nation.

The dynasty of the *Capets*, which began before the time of the Norman conquest of England and lasted down to the '*Louis Capet*' (Louis XVI.) who was put to death during the French Revolution, had now ruled France for about five hundred years. But the France ruled by the first Capet was only the portion marked dark on the map. It was as though the King of England had ruled only Yorkshire. The rest of France was divided among the great Barons.

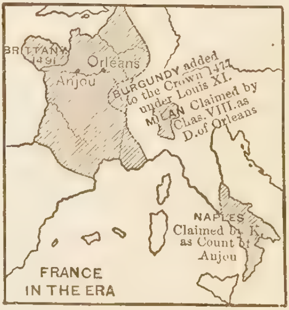

FLANDERS
NORMANDY
1210
BRITTANY
1491
FRANCE
under
Hugh Capet
BURGUNDY
1477
& GUIENNE
AQUITAINE
1461
TOULOUSE
1361
PROVINCE
1491

THE GROWTH OF FRANCE

These Baronies, or '*Duchies*,' had gradually been absorbed into the kingdom. The dates when they thus fell in are marked on the map.

France claimed Milan, and Naples also.

Now if we look at France at the beginning of the new era, we shall see, from comparing the two maps, how she had grown, and how she claimed now not only all France, but Milan and Naples also. She had, in fact, become the second great power in Europe, and by aiming to become the first, made herself the great rival of Spain.


BRITTANY
1491
Orleans
Anjou
BURGUNDY added to the Crown 1477 under Louis XI.
MILAN Claimed by Chas. VIII. as D. of Orleans
NAPLES
Claimed by K. as Count of Anjou

FRANCE IN THE ERA

What were the secrets of her growing power? As we have seen, Machiavelli said that Italy was weaker than either Spain or France, because the latter were each of them *united under one Crown.*

This union of all France the result of—

We have now to mark the reasons given by him why the Duchies of France had become united under the Crown.

Crown hereditary;

(1) The Crown was not elective, as in Germany, but hereditary in the royal family.

primogeniture;

(2) The *rule of inheritance* in France was not division among all the sons, but descent to the eldest son only.

intermarriage with the royal family.

(3) Intermarriages with the royal family not only made the great Barons loyal to the throne, but sometimes united their Duchies to the Crown under one heir; *e.g.* the kings of France, as heirs of the Duchies of Anjou and Orleans, claimed both those Duchies and also their rights to Naples and Milan.

The towns.

(4) The towns, as in Spain and elsewhere, had favoured the growth of the central power as the best means of freeing themselves from their old feudal lords. Most of them had long ago obtained charters of freedom, and now held only of the Crown.

Final struggle of the Crown with Burgundy.

The final struggle of the Crown with the great feudal Barons had been concluded just before the era commenced. It had been a hard struggle between Louis XI. and the Duke of Burgundy. The king had prevailed, and from that time the unity of France was settled. She had become powerful enough to hold her own against both internal and foreign foes.

England had once claimed a great part of France, but

English conquests at an end.

there was henceforth no real chance of her getting it back again. She could no longer find allies on French soil against France.

It is true that we shall find Henry VIII. still dreaming sometimes of reversing the decision of the 'hundred years' war' which had ended in the withdrawal of England from all France except the town of Calais; and we shall find Spain and England combining during the era more than once to crush France. But in reality the object of these wars we shall find to be not so much the dismemberment of France as opposition to the aggressive policy of Louis XII. and Francis I., and their invasions of Italy.

The English wars had helped to unite the nation, and increase the power of the Crown:

The hundred years' war with England had also tended to consolidate the French nation. It was a national and even popular struggle to turn out a foreign foe. It necessitated the levying of national armies and the payment of national taxes. It did for France, to some extent, what the wars with the Moors did for Spain: it strengthened the central power of the Crown, and gave it a recognized place as natural head and leader of the nation, in peace as well as in war.

but there were seeds of disunion within.

But the misfortune of France was that in outwardly becoming a great nation by uniting all the Duchies under the Crown, and so enlarging the size of France on the map, sad mistakes were made, which prevented her growth in *internal unity*, which sowed the seeds of bitter feeling between classes, and ended in producing her Great Revolution.

We cannot note too carefully these fatal mistakes.

(1) The king got the power of levying taxes—the

'*taille*'—without the consent of the people. The 'Estates General,' or French Parliament, which had hitherto had a voice in matters of taxation, hereafter had none; the Crown became absolute.

Royal taxes without consent of the people.

(2) The king, successful in his war against England, henceforth out of these taxes kept a large standing army.

Royal standing army.

These things, said *Philip de Commines*, the contemporary French historian of Louis XI., 'gave a wound to his kingdom which will not soon be closed.'

He was right, for these two things kept classes apart and broke up the internal unity of France. To see how they did this, let us look at each class separately.

The nobility or *noblesse* of France were made into a permanently separate caste. In old times they paid no taille, because they gave their military services to the king in his wars. Now there was a standing army they were less and less needed as soldiers, yet their freedom from taxation remained. They were a privileged class, and intermarried with one another. Their estates went down to their eldest sons, but the younger sons, too, belonged to the noblesse. So they became a very numerous class, poor, but proud of their blood and freedom from taxes.

The noblesse a privileged untaxed caste.

The *peasantry*, on the other hand, were the burdened class. In some respects they were much better off than the German peasantry. Very early in their history feudal serfdom had been abolished in the north of France, especially in Normandy; while in most parts their services in labour had been long ago changed into fixed rents, paid most often in corn, wine, or fruits. But their young crops still suf-

The peasantry not serfs,

but paying rents

fered from the lord's game. They still had tolls and fees and heriots to pay, and forced labour to give on the roads. They still looked up to the feudal lord as to a master, and the lord down upon them as born for service. There was an impassable barrier of blood between the two classes. The Church added her claims—her tithes, as in other countries, and the endless fees and money payments, which made her so obnoxious. Bishops and abbots, in France as in Germany, had large estates as well as tithes, and so were landlords and princes as well as priests, drawing, Machiavelli says, two-fifths of the annual revenues of the kingdom into their ecclesiastical coffers. Lastly came the extra burden of the taille, growing with the military needs of kings who, having an army, and not content with turning out the English and conquering refractory barons, must needs lay claim to Milan and Naples, and invade Italy.

and tithes

and taille.

Here is a picture drawn by the peasants themselves of their hard lot, as they complained to the States General on the accession of Charles VIII., and laid their grievances before the new monarch, hoping for a remedy which never came.

Their grievances.

'During the past thirty-four years troops have been 'ever passing through France and living on the poor 'people. When the poor man has managed 'by the sale of the coat on his back, after 'hard toil, to pay his taille, and hopes he may live out 'the year on the little he has left, then come fresh troops 'to his cottage, eating him up. In Normandy multi'tudes have died of hunger. From want of beasts men 'and women have to yoke themselves to the carts, and 'others, fearing that if seen in the daytime they will be 'seized for not having paid their taille, are compelled to 'work at night. The king should have pity on his poor 'people, and relieve them from the said tailles and 'charges.'

Alas! Charles VIII., instead of listening to their complaints, took to invading Italy! increasing their taille and spilling more of their blood.

When to all this we add the consciousness that while they, the much-enduring peasantry, were bearing their increasing burdens, the noblesse were free from them, can we wonder if the peasantry should learn to hate as well as envy the nobles?

The middle class leave the country for the towns.

The middle class in order to escape the incidents of the rural taxation more and more left the rural districts to live in the towns. Not sharing the blood or the freedom from taille of the nobles, there was no mixing or intermarrying with them. They were of different castes. Neither did the men of the towns sympathize with the peasantry. They had their taille to pay like the peasantry, but under their charters they enjoyed privileges which the peasant did not. They were merchants rather than manufacturers. Some linen manufactures were carried on in Brittany and Normandy, but mostly France was supplied with goods from the looms of Flanders in exchange for corn and wine. The towns were the markets in which the products of the peasant were exchanged, and the townsmen thus had the chance of throwing a part of their burdens on their rural customers in the shape of tolls and dues. While thus the noblesse grew prouder and poorer, and the peasantry were more and more burdened, the middle classes in the towns grew richer and more and more powerful.

Hence the gulf between different classes in France was ever widening. The Crown was absolute and uncontrolled by any parliament, the noblesse a privileged caste, the middle class settling in the towns, while the poor peasantry were left to bear their burdens alone in the country. France had grown a big united country on the map, but looking within the nation, a state of things had begun which, if unreformed, was sure in the end to produce revolution, though it might not come yet.

Separation of classes the main vice in French polity.

In the meantime the first false steps of the absolute kings of France were those attempts at aggrandizement which led them to invade Italy and prove their strength in a long rivalship with Spain. To gratify a royal lust for empire and military glory they were ready to sacrifice the welfare of the French people.

Love of foreign wars the chief vice in her policy.

(*e*) *England.*

England had advanced further on the path of modern civilization than any other country.

The English people had long ago become a compact nation, with a strong central government, and with one law for all classes within it.

The English nation already formed.

England had passed under the feudal system, and, like other countries, had her separate feudal elements, needing to be blended into one compact whole. But happily in England this work had in good measure been done.

Her feudal nobles, especially since the wars of the Roses, had been thoroughly subdued under the central power. Early in her history the petty feudal lords had sunk into commoners. Unlike the noblesse of France, the nobility of England was not a separate caste. The younger sons of nobles

The nobility not a caste.

became commoners, while their title to nobility, as well as their estates, went to the eldest sons only.

Middle classes.

England possessed a numerous and powerful middle class, and it was not, as in France, confined to the towns. Landowners and yeomen in the country belonged to it, as well as the citizens and merchants.

The Crown also subject to the laws.

And whilst all classes, including the nobility, had been subjected to the central government, they had none of them been crushed and humbled. The Crown had not become absolute, as in France. It, too, was subject to the laws of the land.

The central power, or government, consisted of—

The government a constitutional monarchy.

(1) the King, (2) the House of Lords, in which the nobility had seats; and (3) the House of Commons, where the representatives of the free landholders, and of the free citizens or burgesses, sat side by side. No law could be passed without the concurrence of the Crown and both Houses of Parliament. And the laws so passed were binding alike on king, nobility, and commoners, *i. e.*, on the whole nation. Nor could the Crown levy taxes without the consent of Parliament. The government of England was a constitutional monarchy, and had long been so.

The ecclesiastics.

There was, however, still one class of people who were not altogether blended into the nation—the ecclesiastics or clergy. Bishops and abbots, because they were great landholders and peers of the realm, had seats in the House of Lords, just as in Germany the ecclesiastical princes were Electors as well as the lay princes. In this sense they were Englishmen. But the clergy in the main owed allegiance to

Ecclesiastics not altogether Englishmen.

Rome, and in spite of the Constitutions of Clarendon, were still ruled by ecclesiastical law and ecclesiastical courts, and resented civil interference. So they were subjects of the great Roman ecclesiastical empire rather than of England. Their allegiance was at least divided between the Pope and the king, and often they were really foreigners. The Pope at the same time drew large revenues from England as well as the king. The ecclesiastical power was more under control, and had been for long more restrained by law in England than anywhere else; but still the fact was that Rome had ecclesiastical sway over England. And in England, as elsewhere, the clergy and monks had got a large part of the land into their hands—probably about one-third of the land of England belonged to them, as well as tithes from the whole.

The Pope drew revenues from England.

The fact that there was one law of the land made by King and Parliament, and ruling all classes in the realm (except the clergy), had, more than anything else, helped the peasantry to rise out of feudal servitude. There was no peasantry in Europe (except the Swiss) which had already so completely got out of it as the English.

The peasantry had got free from feudal servitude.

It early became the law of the land in England that the services of the peasant could not be increased by the lord. What they had been by long custom they must not exceed. Then, by the influence of commerce, money payments were early substituted for labor service. So that people became used to money rents for land and money wages for labour. The population of England had increased very rapidly up to the fourteenth century. It was then nearly twice what it was afterwards, because the Black Death in 1349 swept away half of it in a few months. This of course made labour scarce. In spite of all that the lords could do, and in spite even of Acts of Parliament passed to prevent it, there was a great rise in wages.

Under the feudal law the feudal tenants might not leave their land. But now more and more they went to the towns, where they could earn higher wages than by tilling the land. There was of course a struggle to prevent it, but aided by the towns, the process went on. The feudal lords tried to enforce the old services, which had become so much more valuable since the Black Death. The more they did, the more their tenants deserted the land and went to the towns. The peasantry kept up a kind of strike, which came to a climax in the rebellion under Wat Tyler in 1381. They were so far successful that fixed money payments became general instead of services, and by the time of Henry VII. feudal servitude or villenage was at an end in England.

The present condition of the peasantry.

Quite a new state of things had grown up. Owing to the growth of the woollen manufactures, and the demand for wool, sheep-farming had very much increased. Instead of a lot of little peasants' holdings, the large farms of the wealthy sheep-owners often covered the country side. The masses of the people in England were more and more becoming a free people working for wages, while such tenants as remained on the land paid fixed money rents instead of services, and instead of being tied to the land were ejected from their holdings if they could not pay their rents. No doubt the masses of the people in England had their hardships to endure. They had suffered during the civil war of the Roses from anarchy and lawlessness and the ravages of armies. Soldiers disbanded after foreign wars disturbed the country. Small tenants found it hard to compete with larger ones, and on failure to pay their rents lost their farms very often. The number of ejections from the land added of course to the idle vagrant population. Robbery was thereby increased, and as both thieves and vagabonds were hung, sometimes twenty might be seen hanging from a single gibbet. All this showed that there were evils at work—many things needing reform—but the English peasantry had earned by their past struggles this great advantage: instead of being servile tenants of feudal lords, they were free subjects, protected by the law of the land, though freedom did not necessarily make them better off, but often the contrary. They had indeed as yet no share in making the laws, but there was nothing in their blood or in the law of England to prevent their rising by industry and thrift into owners of land, and as such claiming a voice in the government of their country.

Freedom did not necessarily make them better off.

They had no share in the government, but there was nothing to prevent their getting it.

Such was England when, after the wars of the Roses, Henry VII. conquered at the Battle of Bosworth, and ascended the throne in 1485.

Henry VII.

A Welshman, and landed in Wales.

Henry VII. was born an orphan, a few months after the death of his father, Edmund Tudor, Earl of Richmond. He was an exile in Brittany while the civil wars were raging in England. He was twenty-six when the young princes were murdered, and Richard III. usurped the throne. At once, under the advice of Morton, Bishop of Ely, an attempt was made to dethrone in his favour the tyrant Richard III. He was only twenty-eight when, after landing at Milford Haven, and winning at the Battle of Bosworth, he was proclaimed king. His family (the Tudors) were Welsh, and so he had wisely landed in Wales. Belonging himself to the Lancastrian house, and in order to conciliate the Yorkists, he had taken an oath to marry, and afterwards married, Elizabeth of York, daughter of Edward IV., thereby in a way uniting the blood of the two rival factions. He was received with acclamation in London, and ascended a precarious throne. It is well to note how precarious it was. The four previous kings had all been violently dethroned—Henry VI. imprisoned and murdered, Edward IV. deposed and exiled, Edward V. murdered, Richard III. slain in the Battle of Bosworth.

The throne precarious.

Henry VII. himself was a usurper, and, though he was king by Act of Parliament, there were other claimants to the throne. Two of them, generally thought to be impostors, invaded England, and tried to seize upon his throne.

Other claimants.

The first of these, *Lambert Simnel*, called himself Edward, Earl of Warwick, and was supported by the Yorkist nobility, but defeated at the battle of Stoke in 1487.

Lambert Simnel.

The other, *Perkin Warbeck*, professed to be the Duke of York, who with his brother, Edward V., was supposed to have been murdered by Richard III. He was supported by Edward IV.'s sister, the Duchess of Burgundy, by the kings of France and Scotland, who were continually plotting against Henry VII., and every now and then, when it suited his purpose, by Ferdinand of Spain. Perkin Warbeck was taken prisoner in 1497, and beheaded in 1499.

Perkin Warbeck.

Henry VII.'s foreign policy was peace and alliance with Spain. We have seen that the foreign policy of Spain was alliance with

Henry VII.'s foreign policy.

England against France. Henry VII. wanted peace. This alone could give him a chance of establishing himself firmly on his precarious throne. To get peace he allied himself with Spain. While both were infants the Prince of Wales was betrothed to the Princess of Spain, Catherine of Arragon. Ferdinand was a treacherous ally. He dragged Henry VII. into the war with France which ended in the annexation of Brittany to France. And when it suited his purpose he threatened to dethrone Henry, and even offered Catherine of Arragon to the King of Scotland. At length, as years passed, the marriage of Prince Arthur to Catherine took place; but Prince Arthur soon after died. Then came negotiations for Catherine's marriage with Prince Henry (Henry VIII.), and on the death of his queen Henry VII. offered to marry his late son's widow himself! At length, in 1503, the contract for the marriage with the Prince Henry was signed, but as Henry was not yet of age it could be set aside if any other alliance suited him better.

Marriages with Catherine of Arragon.

It is well to mark how these royal marriages were merely a part of the foreign policy of princes, and that from the first there had been great lack of good faith as regards *this* marriage, on which so much of England's future history was to turn.

Henry VII.'s domestic policy was in the main wise. King and usurper as he was, he yet took great pains to conform to the law of the land. Instead of trying to make the crown absolute, he remembered he was a constitutional monarch, and could levy no taxes without consent of Parliament.

Henry VII.'s domestic policy.

Still, though a constitutional monarchy, the government of England in Tudor times was not conducted just

His position as regards Parliament.

as it is now. Parliament did not sit every year as it does now. Nor were there as now a prime minister and a cabinet of ministers representing the majority in Parliament, responsible to Parliament, remaining in office only so long as they can command a majority in Parliament, and giving place to another prime minister and cabinet as soon as they find themselves in a minority. The king had the reins of government much more in his own hands than the Crown has now. He chose his own ministers who were responsible to him alone. And as the regular annual revenues of the Crown were sufficient to pay for the ordinary expenses of government, and did not need voting by Parliament every year as they do now, it was only when he had a war on hand, or something extraordinary happened needing fresh taxes or laws, that it was needful for a Tudor king to call a Parliament.

His minister, Cardinal Morton.

The chief minister of Henry VII. was Cardinal Morton, a true Englishman, though an ecclesiastic. He was a man of large experience. He was in middle life when Henry was born. He was a privy councillor, and faithful adherent of Henry VI. Edward IV. had made him his Lord Chancellor, and his executor. Richard III. had thrown him into prison, but he had escaped in time to plan the enterprise which proved successful at Bosworth Field, and to him Henry VII. owed his throne.

Under the influence of Morton Henry VII. on the whole did what the weal of England required.

Order maintained.

With a strong hand he kept all classes subject to the laws of the land, quelled rebellion, and maintained internal peace and order. He was avaricious, but even in his most hard and unjust exactions he kept within the letter of the law.

In order to keep the nobility in check he favoured the growth and power of the middle classes—notably of the 'yeomen,' *i. e.* small landholders, and tenant farmers.

Middle classes favoured.

Thus he did much to conciliate the English nation after the long civil wars. He also paved the way for the union of England and Scotland by the marriage of his daughter Mary to the king of Scots. Being himself a Welshman, he reconciled the Welsh to English rule. After a struggle of 1,000 years they at length were satisfied with union with England. Under the Tudor dynasty they ceased to feel themselves a conquered people, and though retaining their separate language, ceased to rebel from what they no longer considered a foreign yoke.

Paved the way for the union of England and Scotland.

Finally conciliated the Welsh.

To these claims of Henry VII. to English respect we must add that, though not sagacious enough to patronize Columbus, he did the next best thing in sending out afterwards *Sebastian Cabot* to discover and claim for England a foothold across the ocean which proved the beginning of those extensions of England in America in which half the English people now dwell. Thus he was the founder of England's colonial empire.

And began England's colonial empire.

Of his later years we shall have to speak again. In the meantime it may help to fix some of these facts on our minds if we dwell a moment on his tomb.

'His corpse' (says the chronicler) 'was conveyed with 'funeral pomp to Westminster, and there buried by the 'good queen, his wife, in a sumptuous and 'solemn chapel, which he had not long 'before caused to be builded.' He was buried in a vault just big enough for himself and his

The tomb of Henry VII.

queen, under the pavement in the centre of that beautiful chapel which still bears his name, and in which, round this central tomb, so many Tudor and Stuart princes were afterwards laid. When Henry VII.'s vault was opened in 1689 there were found to be three coffins instead of two! The third was discovered to be that of James I. To make room for it the wood had been stripped off the other two, leaving the inner lead coffins bare. The workmen engaged in this strange work were found to have quaintly scratched their names on the lead, with the date 1625.

In that tomb of Henry VII. lie, therefore, not only the heirs of the two English contending factions of York and Lancaster, and of the traditions of Wales, but also the Scotch monarch who, thanks to the policy of his great-grandfather, Henry VII., ascended the English throne and became the first king of Great Britain.

CHAPTER IV.

THE NEED OF REFORM AND DANGER OF REVOLUTION.

(*a*) *The Necessity for Reform.*

Now, after this review of the state of Christendom, it will be easy to see in what points it fell short of the demands of modern civilization and wherein therefore reform was needful.

We said that the first point towards which modern civilization specially tended was this, viz., the formation of compact nations living peaceably side by side, respecting one another's rights and freedom.

Italy and Germany not yet united nations.

We have seen that the modern nations were fast forming themselves—that England, France, and Spain were already formed, but that Italy and Germany were lagging far behind in this matter.

The lack of international peace and justice.

But none of the nations were living peaceably side by side, and respecting one another's rights. They were at constant war, sometimes under the leadership of the Pope, like a band of robbers, setting upon Venice, or Naples, or Milan; then quarrelling amongst themselves, and forming fresh leagues to drive one another out. Their foreign policy was aggressive and wofully wanting in good faith. This want of public peace and international morality was a crying evil. It disturbed commerce, and its worst result was that it inflicted terrible hardships on the masses of the people. The voice of the French peasantry was clear upon this point. Here then was need for reform.

The second great point aimed at by modern civilization was, that (looking *within* each nation) all classes of the people were to be alike citizens, for whose common weal the nation was to be governed, and who were ultimately to govern themselves.

The serfdom of the German peasantry still continued.

Not only as yet had the masses of the people no share in the government of the nations of which they formed so large a part, but also they were very far from being regarded as free citizens, except in England, where in theory they were so, though perhaps not much so in practice. In Germany especially, the peasantry were still in feudal serfdom, and feeling their thraldom more keenly than ever. Here, again, was a necessity for reform.

We have already seen that there was a necessity for reform in that ecclesiastical system of Rome which opposed the free growth of the modern nations, and in the scholastic system so intimately connected with it, which was opposed to free thought, science, and true religion, and prevented the diffusion of the benefits of knowledge and education among the masses of the people.

The ecclesiastical and scholastic systems needed reform.

Now the question for the new era was, whether the onward course of modern civilization was to be by a gradual timely reform in these things, or whether, reform being refused or thwarted, it was to be by revolution.

The alternatives, reform or revolution.

Recognizing the necessity there was for reform, we have now to see the danger there was of revolution; how far and wide, in fact, the train was already laid, waiting only for the match to explode it.

(*b*) *The Train laid for Revolution.*

It will not seem strange, (1), that it was among the oppressed peasantry of Germany that the train was most effectually laid for revolution; or, (2), that when attempts had been made at revolution, they were aimed at the redress of both religious and political grievances.

The train was laid among the German peasantry.

The ecclesiastical grievances of the peasantry were as practical and real as those involved in feudal serfdom. The peasant's bondage to the priests and monks was often even harder than the bondage to his feudal lords. It was not only that he had tithes to pay, but after paying tithes, he still had to pay for everything he got from priests and church. That religion which should have been his help and comfort was become a system of extortion and fraud.

Their ecclesiastical as well as feudal grievances.

These are the words of a contemporary writer (Juan de Valdez, the brother of the secretary of the Emperor Charles V.), himself a Catholic, and well acquainted with the condition of things in Germany: 'I see that we can scarcely get 'anything from Christ's ministers but for money; at bap-'tism money, at bishoping money, at marriage money, 'for confession money—no, not extreme unction without 'money! They will ring no bells without money, no 'burial in the church without money; so that it seemeth 'that Paradise is shut up from them that have no money. 'The rich is buried in the church, the poor in the church-'yard. The rich man may marry with his nearest kin, 'but the poor not so, albeit he be ready to die for love of 'her. The rich may eat flesh in Lent, but the poor may 'not, albeit fish perhaps be much dearer. The rich man 'may readily get large indulgences, but the poor none, be-'cause he wanteth money to pay for them.'

Contemporary testimony.

We must remember, too, how galling to the peasant was the payment of the large and small tithes. These words were written in England, but they will serve for all Europe:

'They have their tenth part of all the corn, meadows, 'pasture, grass, wood, colts, calves, lambs, pigs, geese, 'and chickens. Over and beside the tenth 'part of every servant's wages, wool, milk, 'honey, wax, cheese, and butter; yea, and 'they look so narrowly after their profits that the poor 'wife must be countable to them for every tenth egg, or 'else she getteth not her rights at Easter, and shall be 'taken as a heretic.'

Another testimony.

Can we wonder that the peasants should rebel against this? and that in Germany, where both feudal and ecclesiastical oppression was so galling, they should rebel against both, and mix the two together in their minds, demanding in one breath both religious and political freedom? Surely there was reason in it.

As early as the fourteenth century the Swiss peasants in the Forest Cantons had rebelled and thrown off the yoke of their Austrian feudal lords, and when the latter joined in a common cause against them, the Swiss were victorious in the battle of Morgarten, 1315. The Swiss had formerly belonged to the German Empire, and had the Empire done justice between them and their lords, they would have been glad enough to remain free peasants of the Empire; but as the Empire helped their lords instead of them, they threw off the yoke of the Empire. They were soon joined by other neighboring cantons, and their flag, with its white cross on a red ground, became the flag of a new nation, the Swiss confederacy, with its motto, 'Each for all, and all for each'—a nation of free peasants, letting out their sons as soldiers to fight for pay, and, alas, not always on the side of freedom!

Successful rebellion of the Swiss, 1315,

Between 1424 and 1471 the peasants of the Rhætian Alps did the same thing. Oppressed and insulted by their lords they burned their castles and threw off their yoke, and thus was formed the Graubund, in imitation of the Swiss confederacy, but separate from it.

and the peasants of the Graubund, 1441-71.

Referring to the map '*Serfdom and Rebellions against it*,' we mark these two Swiss republics on it as the region where rebellion had met with success. It was no doubt their mountains which helped the Swiss peasants to success and independence. Their battles were little Marathons. At Morgarten 1,300 Swiss won the day against 10,000 Austrian troops. Their Alps were their protection.

We mark next the region where the rebellion against

Unsuccessful rebellion of the Lollards and Hussite wars, 1415-1436.

Rome and the Empire, which followed in Bohemia upon the preaching of Wiclif and martyrdom of Huss, had been, after a long reign of terror, and the Hussite wars (1415-1436), quelled in blood. Hussite doctrines were indeed still held by the people, and by the treaty of Basle in some sense tolerated; but this, nevertheless, was the region where rebellion, springing out of the last era of light and progress, had been crushed to rise no more.

Now we have got to mark where, in connexion with the new era, there were signs, as we have said, that a train was laid for a coming revolution.

Threats of Rebellion in Franconia in 1476.

The John the Baptist of the movement was *Hans Boheim*, a drummer, who had appeared in 1476 in Franconia, on the Tauber, a branch of the Maine. He professed to be a prophet, to have had visions of the Virgin Mary, and to be sent by her to proclaim that the Kingdom of God was at hand, that the yoke of bondage to lords spiritual and temporal was coming to an end, that under the new kingdom there were to be no taxes, tithes, or dues; all were to be brethren, and woods, and waters, and pastures were to be free to all men. A crowd of 40,000 pilgrims flocked to hear the prophet of the Tauber till the Bishops of Wurzburg and Maintz interfered, dispersed the crowd and burned the prophet. He was but a sign of the times—a voice crying in the wilderness! But his cry was one which found a response in the hearts of the peasantry—freedom from the yoke of their feudal and spiritual lords, and the restoration of those rights which in ancient days had belonged to the community. This was the cry of the peasantry for many generations to come.

The next was a much more formidable movement, viz.

that named from the banner borne by the peasantry, the *Bundschuh*, or peasant's clog.

The 'Bundschuh'

While the peasants in the Rhætian Alps were gradually throwing off the yoke of the nobles and forming the *Graubund*, a struggle was going on between the neighbouring peasantry of Kempten (to the east of Lake Constance) and their feudal lord, the Abbot of Kempten. It began in 1423, and came to an open rebellion in 1492. It was a rebellion against new demands not sanctioned by ancient custom, and though it was crushed, and ended in little good to the peasantry (many of whom fled into Switzerland), yet it is worthy of note because in it for the first time appears the banner of the Bundschuh.

in Kempten, 1492.

The next rising was in Elsass (Alsace), in 1493, the peasants finding allies in the burghers of the towns along the Rhine, who had their own grievances. The *Bundschuh* was again their banner, and it was to Switzerland that their anxious eyes were turned for help. This movement also was prematurely discovered and put down.

In Elsass, 1493.

Then, in 1501, other peasants, close neighbours to those of Kempten, caught the infection, and in 1502, again in Elsass, but this time further north, in the region about Speyer and the Neckar, lower down the Rhine, nearer Franconia, the *Bundschuh* was raised again. It numbered on its recruit rolls many thousands of peasants from the country round, along the Neckar and the Rhine. The wild notion was to rise in arms, to make themselves free, like the Swiss, by the sword, to acknowledge no superior but the Emperor, and all Germany was to join the League. They were to pay no taxes or dues, and commons, forests, and rivers were to be free to all. Here

Both again in 1501–2.

again they mixed up religion with their demands, and 'Only what is just before God' was the motto on the banner of the *Bundschuh*. They, too, were betrayed, and in savage triumph the Emperor Maximilian ordered their property to be confiscated, their wives and children to be banished, and themselves to be quartered alive. It would have been suicide on the part of the nobles to fulfil orders so cruel on their own tenants. They would have emptied their estates of peasants, and so have lost their services, for the conspiracy was widely spread. Few, therefore, really fell victims to this cruel order of the Emperor. The ringleaders dispersed, fleeing some into Switzerland and some into the Black Forest. For ten years now there was silence. The *Bundschuh* banner was furled, but only for a while.

About the Black Forest 1512–13, under Joss Fritz.

In 1512 and 1513, on the east side of the Rhine, in the Black Forest and the neighbouring districts of Würtemberg, the movement was again on foot on a still larger scale. It had found a leader in *Joss Fritz*. A soldier, with commanding presence, and great natural eloquence, used to battle, hardship, and above all, patience, he bided his time. He was one of the fugitives who had escaped being 'quartered.' He hid himself for years in places where he was unknown, but never despaired. At length, in 1512 he returned to his own land, settled near Freiburg, and began to draw together again the broken threads of the Peasants' league. He got himself appointed forester under a neighbouring lord, talked to the peasants in the fields, or at inns and fairs, and held secret meetings at a lonely place among the forests in the dusk of evening. There he talked of the peasants' burdens, of the wealth of their ecclesiastical oppressors, of the injustice of their blood being spilled in the quarrels of lords and princes, how they were robbed of the wild game of the forest, and the fish in the rivers, which in the sight of God were free, like the air and the sun, to all men, how they ought to have no masters but God, the Pope, and the Emperor. Lastly, he talked to them of the *Bundschuh*. They went to consult their priest, but Joss had talked over the priest to his side, and he encouraged the movement. Then they framed their articles, and Joss defended them out of the Bible. They were first to seek the sanction and aid of the Emperor, and if he refused to help them then they would turn to the Swiss.

There was a company of licensed beggars who tramped about the country with their wallets, begging alms wherever they went—a sort of guild, with elected captains. This guild Joss took into his confidence. They were his spies, and through them he knew what watches were kept at city gates, and through them he kept the various ends of the conspiracy going. His plans were now all laid. He wanted nothing but the *Bundschuh* banner. He got some silk and made a banner—blue, with a white cross upon it. The white cross was the Swiss emblem. Some of his followers would have preferred the eagle of the Empire. But how was the *Bundschuh* to be added? What painter could be found who would keep the secret? Twice he tried and was disappointed, and all but betrayed. At length, far away on the banks of the Neckar, he found a painter, who painted upon it the Virgin Mary and St. John, the Pope and the Emperor, a peasant kneeling before the cross, a *Bundschuh*, and under it the motto 'O Lord, help the righteous.' He returned with it under his clothes, but ere he reached home the secret was out. Again the League was betrayed. A few days more and the banner would have been unfurled. Thousands of peasants were ready to march, but now all was over, the whole thing was out, and Joss Fritz, with the banner under his clothes, had to fly for his life to Switzerland. Everything was lost but his own resolution. Those conspirators who were seized were put to torture, hung, beheaded, and some of them quartered alive.

But Joss Fritz was not disheartened. He returned after a while to the Black Forest, went about his secret errands, and again bided his time.

In 1514 in Würtemberg and the Austrian Alps.

In 1514 the peasantry of the Duke Ulrich of Würtemberg rose to resist the tyranny of their lord, who had ground them down with taxes to pay for his reckless luxury and expensive court. The same year, in the valleys of the Austrian Alps, in Carinthia, Styria, and Crain, similar risings of the peasantry took place, all of them ending in the triumph of the nobles.

The Swabian League against the peasants.

To defend themselves against such risings a league had been formed among the nobles of the whole district to the north of Switzerland, called the *Swabian League*, and a proclamation was issued that 'Since in the land of Swabia, and all 'over the Empire, among the vassals and poor people 'disturbances and insurrections are taking place, with 'setting up of the standard of the Bundschuh and other 'ensigns against the authority of their natural lords and 'rulers, with a view to the destruction of the nobles and 'all honourable persons, the noble and knightly orders 'have therefore agreed, whatever shall happen, to support each other against every such attempt on the part 'of the common man.'

This brings forcibly into view again the fatal vice in the policy of feudal Germany—want of the consolidation

Far and wide the train was laid for future revolution.

of the German people into a compact nation. For here were the peasantry of Germany appealing helplessly to some higher power to protect them from the oppression of their feudal lords, conspiring for a general rebellion for lack of it, and debating whether on the flag of the Bundschuh they should paint the eagle of the Empire or the white cross of the Swiss republic. Here on the other hand were the nobles and knightly orders conspiring by the sheer force of their combined swords to crush these ‘attempts on the part of the common man.’ The crying need of both was for a German nation—a commonwealth—with a strong central power or government to hold the sword of justice between them, settling their disputes by the law of the land for their common weal. For lack of this there was rebellion and bloodshed. These risings of the peasantry were crushed for a while, but Joss Fritz was only biding his time, and meanwhile let us bear in mind where, how far and wide over Central Europe, the train was laid, waiting only for the match to ignite it.

The train laid out where serfdom was at its worst, but where freedom was nearest in sight.

It is well to look once more on the map of serfdom, to fix these revolutionary localities in our mind, and before we pass away from them to mark how they lie, *not* in the region of darkest shadow, where serfdom was most complete—where a conquered Slavonian peasantry were in bondage too complete for rebellion—nor in the region of the crushed Hussite rebellions; *but* in those regions next to the countries where serfdom had obtained least hold, and had passed away; above all, in those mountain regions where the traditions of ancient freedom had lived the longest, where the spirit of the people was least subdued, and where the close neighbourhood of their fellow mountaineers of Switzerland kept an example of successful rebellion ever before their eyes. We may see in this way most clearly how these peasants' rebellions were not isolated phenomena, but parts of a great onward movement beginning centuries back, which had already swept over England and France, and freed the peasants there, and now, in this era, had Germany to grapple with. Whether it was destined to be at once successful or not we shall see in this history, but we may be sure it was destined to conquer some day, because we cannot fail to recognize in it one of the waves of the advancing tide of modern civilization.

PART II.

THE PROTESTANT REVOLUTION.

CHAPTER I.

REVIVAL OF LEARNING AND REFORM AT FLORENCE.

(*a*) *The Revivers of Learning at Florence.*

THE story we have now to tell begins at Florence. Florence, as we have already noted, was a republic, but differing from other Italian republics in this: that while in others the nobles held power, here in Florence, for some generations, the nobles had been dethroned. The people had got the rule into their own hands; and so far had they carried their distrust of the nobles, that no noble could hold office in the city unless he first enrolled himself as a simple citizen. Florence had long been a great commercial city, and the public spirit of her citizens had helped to make her prosper-

The Republic of Florence.

ous. Never had she been more prosperous than in the early days of her democracy. But every now and then there were troubled times; and in such times, more than once or twice, a dictator had been chosen. Sometimes even a foreign prince had been made dictator for a stated number of years. At length power had fallen into the hands of the wealthier families of citizens, and the chief of these was the family of the Medici.

Power in the hands of the Medici.

Cosmo de' Medici was for many years dictator. His great wealth, gained by commerce, placed him in the position of a merchant prince. His virtues, and patronage of learned men and the arts, made him popular; and his popularity paved the way for the proud position held by his grandson, 'Lorenzo the Magnificent.'

Cosmo, 1389–1464.

Lorenzo de' Medici (of whose times we are to speak) had followed in Cosmo's footsteps, and had got into his single hand the reins of the state. He had set aside the double council of elected citizens, and now ruled through a council of seventy men chosen by himself. His court was the most brilliant and polished of his time, but in the background of his magnificence there was always this dark shadow—he held his high place at the expense of the liberties of the people of Florence.

Lorenzo de' Medici, 1448–1492.

There was, however, much in his rule to flatter the pride of the Florentines.

Under the Medici, Florence had become the 'Modern Athens.' Their genius and wealth had filled it with pictures and statues, and made it the home of artists and sculptors. At this very moment, in Lorenzo's palace and under his patronage, was young *Michael Angelo*, ere long to be the

Florence the Modern Athens.

greatest sculptor and one of the greatest painters of Italy.

Michael Angelo.

Learning also, as well as art, had found a home at Florence. The taking of Constantinople by the Turks having driven learned men into Italy, here at Florence, and elsewhere in Italy, the philosophy of Plato was taught by men whose native tongue was Greek. Cosmo de' Medici founded the '*Platonic Academy*,' and *Ficino*, who was now at the head of it, had been trained up under his patronage.

The Platonic Academy.

Ficino.

Politian (Poliziano), the most brilliant and polished Latin poet of the day, was always at the palace, directing the studies of Lorenzo's children, and exchanging Greek epigrams with learned ladies of the court. To this galaxy of distinguished men had recently been added the beautiful young prince, *Pico della Mirandola*, regarded as the greatest linguist and most precocious genius of the age. At twenty-three he had challenged all the learned men of Europe to dispute with him at Rome; and some of the opinions he advanced being charged with heresy, he had taken refuge at the court of Lorenzo, who gave him a villa near his own and Politian's, on the slope of the mountain overlooking the rich valley of the Arno and the domes and towers of Florence. What these three friends—Ficino the Platonist, Politian the poet, and Pico, their young and brilliant companion—were to each other, let this little letter picture to us.

Politian, 1454–1494; and Pico della Mirandola, 1463–1494.

Politian writes to Ficino, and asks him to come.

'My little villa is very secluded, it being embosomed among woods, but in some directions it may be said to overlook all Florence. Here Pico often steals in upon me unexpectedly from his grove of oaks, and draws me away with him from my hiding-place to partake of one of his pleasant suppers—temperate, as you know well, and brief, but always seasoned with delightful talk and wit. You will, perhaps, like better to come to me, where your fare will not be worse, and your wine better—for in that I may venture to vie even with Pico.'

Add to this picture the brilliance of Lorenzo's court, and what a fascinating picture it is!

This little knot of men at Florence, and others in Italy, were at work at what is called the 'Revival of Learning.' These revivers of learning are often spoken of as 'the *Humanists.*' They were digging up again, and publishing, by means of the printing-press, the works of the old Greek and Latin writers, and they found in them something to their taste much more true and pure than the literature of the middle ages. After reading the pure Latin of the classical writers they were disgusted with the bad Latin of the monks; after studying Plato they were disgusted with scholastic philosophy. Such was the rottenness of Rome that they found in the high aspirations of Plato after spiritual truth and immortality a religion which seemed to them purer than the grotesque form of Christianity which Rome held out to them. They could flatter the profligate Pope as all but divine in such words as 'Sing unto Sixtus a new song,' but in their hearts some of them scoffed, and doubted whether Christianity be true and whether there is a life after death for mankind.

The Revival of Learning.

Semi-pagan tendencies of the revival of learning.

(*b*) *The great Florentine Reformer, Girolamo Savonarola.*

These were the revivers of learning. But suddenly there arose amongst them quite another kind of man—a religious Reformer. He came like a shell in the midst of tinder, and it burst in the midst of the Platonic Academy. The name

Girolamo Savonarola, 1452–1498.

of this Florentine Reformer was *Girolamo Savonarola.* He too was a learned man, meant by his father to be a doctor, but being of a religious turn of mind he had chosen to become a monk. Finding from study of the Scriptures how much both the Church and the world needed reform, he became a Reformer. In 1486 he commenced preaching against the vices of popes, cardinals, priests and monks, the tyranny of princes, and the bad morals of the people, calling loudly for repentance and reformation. In 1487 he preached at Reggio. There young Pico heard him, and, taken by his eloquence, invited him to Florence. In 1490 he came to the convent of St. Mark, which was under the patronage of the Medici. Crowds came to hear him; shopkeepers shut up their shops while he was preaching. He became the idol of the people. In 1491 he was made Prior of San Marco, and when asked to do customary homage to the patron for this high appointment he refused, saying 'he owed it to God, and not to Lorenzo de' Medici!'

Becomes a religious reformer.

Made prior of St. Mark at Florence.

Innocent VIII. had now succeed Sixtus IV. as Pope, and his natural son had married Lorenzo's daughter. The Pope in return had made Lorenzo's son John (afterwards Leo X.), a boy of thirteen, a cardinal! When Savonarola thundered against ecclesiastical scandals and the vices of the Pope, Lorenzo naturally did not like it. He sent messages to the preacher, exhorting him to use discretion. 'Entreat him,' replied the Reformer, 'in my name, to repent of his errors, for calamities from on high impend over him and his family.' The bold Reformer went on with his preaching, denouncing judgments upon Italy and Rome. A marked impression was soon visible in the morals of the

Stirs up in the people the spirit of reform and freedom.

people of Florence. More and more he became their natural leader. Lorenzo tried to keep himself popular by fêtes and magnificent festivals. But gradually influential citizens, who still longed for the old republic and ancient liberty, attached themselves to Savonarola. In 1492 Lorenzo de' Medici died. The Reformer had been sent for, and was with him at his death. It was rumoured that he demanded of the dying man, as a condition of absolution, that he should restore to Florence her ancient liberties. This year Innocent VIII. too died; and in 1493 the wicked reign of Alexander VI. and his son Cæsar Borgia began. While they were plotting to bring over Charles VIII. of France to scourge Italy, Savonarola mixed up with his denunciations against the evils of the times prophecies of impending woes upon Florence. Then came the armies of France; friendly relations between the French and the Florentines; the expulsion of the Medici, by their aid, from Florence; the formation of a republic, under the advice of Savonarola. He declined to hold any office, but his spirit ruled supreme. Convents were reformed, and the study of the Bible in the original language made a part of the duty of the monks. Schools for the education of the children of the people were founded; and Savonarola went on with his preaching, denouncing the wickedness of the Church and demanding reform.

Death of Lorenzo and Innocent VIII.

The French invasion. The Medici expelled. The republic restored.

Savonarola's reforms.

In 1495 Pope Alexander VI. thought it was time to stop so dangerous a preacher. He cited him to Rome, but the people would not let him go. He offered to make him a cardinal as the price of his loyalty to Rome, but he publicly replied that the only red hat to which he aspired was one red in the blood of his own martyrdom.

Had Savonarola died in 1495, his name would have gone down to posterity as that of a reformer singularly zealous, noble, patriotic, judicious, and practical in his aims and conduct. But men are not perfect. The zealous brain is apt to take fire, and enthusiasm is apt to become fanatical. So it was with Savonarola. Both he and the people gave way to excitement. When the time of Carnival came, they dragged their trinkets, pictures, immoral books, vanities of all kinds, into the public square, and made a great bonfire of them. The excitement of the people reacted on the prophet who had raised it. In his later years (he lived only to the age of forty-seven), he prophesied more wildly than ever, thought he saw visions, and did fanatical things which marked a brain fevered and unbalanced. Be it so; we are not therefore to forget to pay homage to the man who, even in these later years, was bold enough to put the Borgian Pope to well-merited shame, and to denounce his vices, regardless alike of his bribes or his threats. That the Pope was powerful enough at length to put him to silence by imprisonment, to make him confess his heresies by torture, and on his return to them when the torture was removed, to silence him for ever by a cruel death, did but cast the halo of martyrdom around his heroism and make his name immortal. He was strangled and burned at Florence by order of the Pope in 1498—by order of that Pope who had himself committed murder and sacrilege and unheard-of-crimes, and who five years after died of the poison prepared, as was said, for another!

He becomes fanatical.

Is martyred by order of the Pope Alexander VI.

(c) *Savonarola's Influence on the Revivers of Learning.*

Lorenzo had died in 1492, and Savonarola, as we have said, was present at his death-bed. Pico, who had in-

His influence over Pico, Politian, and Ficino.

vited him to Florence, became a devout disciple of Savonarola, and after three years of pure and childlike piety, remarkably free from fanaticism, died in 1495. Just as Charles VIII. was entering Florence, Pico was buried in the robes of Savonarola's order and in the church of St. Mark. Politian died in the same year; he, too, desired to be buried in the robes of Savonarola's order. Ficino was carried away by the preaching of the Reformer for a while, but was disgusted with the fanaticism of his later years. He died a Platonist, hardly sure whether Christianity be true or not, and this characteristic story is told about his death. He and a friend made a solemn bargain with each other that whichever died first should, if possible, appear to the other and tell him whether indeed there be a life after death. Ficino died first, and is said to have appeared to his friend, exclaiming, 'Oh! Michael! Michael! it is all true!' Whether the story be true or not, it shows exactly the state of mind the Neo-Platonist philosophers were in.

(*d*) *Niccolo Machiavelli.*

Niccolo Machiavelli 1469–1527.

For some time after Savonarola's death Florence was governed by a Council of Ten, by whom was chosen as Secretary of State one of the most remarkable men of the time, *Niccolo Machiavelli*, the historian from whose writings we have several times quoted. He was, perhaps, the keenest diplomatist that ever lived. Schooled in the lying politics of Italy, while Cæsar Borgia and Alexander VI. were plotting and counter-plotting with all the States of Italy and Europe, he conducted the foreign diplomacy of the Republic of Florence till 1512, when under Julius II. the French were driven out of Italy and the sons of

Lorenzo de' Medici re-established in power. The Florentines then lost their freedom of self-government for ever, and Machiavelli found himself an exile. In the retirement of a hidden country life he wrote his great work, 'The Prince.' Its object was to win a way back for its author to political life by convincing the Medici that though he had served under their enemies, he could do them service if they employed him. It answered its purpose. Written in a wicked, lying age, 'The Prince' reflected its vices. Its author made no pretence of a higher virtue than Borgias and Medici would appreciate. He did not scruple to advocate lying whenever it would pay; force and fraud whenever it would succeed; tyranny, if needful to keep a tyrant on his throne; murder and bloodshed as a means of obtaining an end. This was what professedly Christian popes had been doing of late. Machiavelli by putting these maxims into a scientific form in 'The Prince' did but give them a sort of personality. He became, as it were, the demon of politics, and the unchristian policy of the times became known to after ages as 'Machiavellian.'

'The Prince.'

CHAPTER II.

THE OXFORD REFORMERS.

(*a*) *The Spirit of Revival of Learning and Reform is carried from Italy to Oxford.*

THERE were, as we have seen, two distinct movements at Florence in favour (1) of the *Revival of Learning*, and (2) of *Religious Reform*. The distinction and also the connexion between these movements must be marked with care.

Distinction and connexion between Revival of learning and Religious reform.

The revival of the old classical Latin and Greek authors, by making men prefer Plato to the schoolmen dealt a blow at the scholastic system, and even tended towards a rejection of Christianity.

The spirit of religious reform was, on the other hand, a revival of earnest Christian feeling against the scandals of the Church and the irreligion of the age. It was in some sense caused by the revival of learning, for amongst the ancient literature which was revived were the Scriptures and the works of the early Church fathers; and the study of these in their original languages opened men's minds to the need of reform. It also set them against the scholastic theology, and so it came to pass that the spirit of religious reform in its turn dealt a blow against the scholastic system.

Both against the Scholastic system.

When the spirit which sought the revival of learning joined itself with that of religious reform, it produced reformers who aimed at freeing men's minds from the bonds of the scholastic system, at setting up Christ and his apostles instead of the schoolmen as the exponents of what Christianity really is, and lastly at making real Christianity and its golden rule the guide for men and nations, and so the basis of the civilization of the future.

So to some extent it had been in Italy. The revival of learning had produced, not only the Platonic Academy, but also the great Florentine Reformer; and Savonarola, with his fiery religious zeal, had been more than a match for the pagan tendencies of the Platonic Academy. Pico especially, and in part Ficino, had united religious feelings with a love of the Platonic philosophy. Savonarola himself had united a love of letters and zeal for education

P. J. LIBRARY
K. C. K.
BAPTIS

The movement crushed at Florence.

with his spirit of religious reform. But the movement at Florence was now thoroughly crushed. We must look elsewhere for its further development till it becomes a power all over Europe.

Revivers at Oxford.

As in the fourteenth century the movement begun by Wiclif in England was carried into Bohemia by the interchange of students between the Universities of Oxford and Prague, so this movement, begun in Italy, was soon carried by students from Florence to Oxford, and from thence it took a fresh start.

Grocyn and Linacre go to Italy and return to Oxford.

During the lifetime of Lorenzo de' Medici several Oxford students, amongst whom were *Grocyn* and *Linacre*, went to complete their studies in Italy. Linacre was made tutor or fellow-student of Lorenzo's own children (one of whom was afterwards Pope Leo X.). They returned to Oxford to revive there the study of the Greek language and literature. Linacre afterwards became tutor to Arthur Prince of Wales, and physician to Henry VII.

John Colet does the same.

Colet unites the spirit of the new learning and religious reform.

Another Oxford student—*John Colet*—went to Italy after Lorenzo's death and the French invasion of Italy, and while Savonarola was virtually head of the Republic at Florence, also while the scandals of Rome's worst Pope, Alexander VI., and Cæsar Borgia, were in everyone's mouth. He caught the spirit, not only of the revival of learning, but also of religious reform, and, combining the two, became on his return to Oxford the beginner of a movement at Oxford which was to influence Europe.

(*b*) *John Colet, Erasmus, and Thomas More.*

John Colet was son of a lord mayor of London, and likely to succeed to his father's fortune. His earnest religious spirit made him wish to enter the Church. In Italy he studied the writings of Pico and Ficino and Plato, and above all the Bible, and returned to Oxford full of zeal for the new learning and for reform.

Lectures on St. Paul's Epistles at Oxford.

He at once began to lecture at Oxford on St. Paul's Epistles, trying to find out what they meant in the same common sense way that men would use to understand letters written by a living man to his friends; not asking what the learned schoolmen had decided that they meant, but giving the schoolmen the go by (quoting Plato and Pico and Ficino more often than them), and so giving the Epistles a life-like power, interest, and freshness quite new to his hearers. By so doing he hoped to set men's minds free from the scholastic system, to make them inquire into facts for themselves, and drink in at first hand the teachings of the Apostle.

Attacks the schoolmen.

For generations men had become monks and clergymen without even reading the New Testament. Colet found theological students poring over the books of the schoolmen. His lectures were the beginning of a work which went on till it quite revolutionized the theological teaching of the University. Forty years after, people found the books of the schoolmen set aside as useless, and their torn leaves strung up by the corner as waste paper.

He urges also the need of ecclesiastical reform.

Colet had seen in Italy how much the ecclesiastical as well as the scholastic system needed reform; and so in his lectures at Oxford he zealously urged the necessity of a reform in the morals of the clergy. He urged that it was ecclesiastical scandals and the wicked worldly living of the clergy, the way they mixed themselves up with poli tics, and strove after power and money and pleasure, which set men against the Church. 'Whereas,' he said, 'if the clergy lived in the love of God and their neighbours, how soon would then true piety, religion, charity, 'goodness towards men, simplicity, patience, tolerance 'of evil, conquer evil with good! How would it stir up 'the minds of men everywhere to think well of the 'Church of Christ.'

He had seen how wicked the Popes and cardinals of Rome were; and so now, at Oxford, he burst out into hot words, written, as he said, 'with grief and tears,' against ecclesiastical wickedness in high places. He spoke of the Popes as 'wickedly distilling poison, to the 'destruction of the Church.' Unless there could be a reform of the clergy, from the Pope at the head down to the monks and the clergymen, he saw no chance of saving the Church. 'Oh, Jesu Christ, wash for us not 'our feet only, but also our hands and our *head!* Other-'wise our disordered Church cannot be far from death.''

He attracts disciples

A man so earnest was sure to make disciples. Students burdened by scholastic arguments came to him, and gladly accepted his advice to 'keep to the Bible and the Apostles' Creed, letting divines, if they like, dispute about the rest.' They followed him from his lectures to his chambers, and imbibed his love for St. Paul; and along with the new learning, he stirred up in them that real religion which consists in the love of God and one's neighbour, and gives men a new power and ruling motive in life.

and fellow-workers.

Two men especially so came within his influence as to join themselves with him in fellow-work; and it was by their means that it became, in a way in which Colet alone never could have made it, a power all over Europe.

Thomas More.

One of them was *Thomas* (afterwards Sir Thomas, and Lord Chancellor) *More*, a young man, ten years Colet's junior, but so earnest, so full of wit and genius, and withal so good-natured and fascinating, that those who knew him fell in love with him. He had caught at Oxford the love of the new learning which Grocyn and Linacre had brought from Italy; and, as we shall see by-and-by, became a hearty fellow-worker with Colet. Rising by his talents to posts of high influence in the state, he became one of the most prominent figures in English history during this era.

Erasmus.

Early life of Erasmus.

The other fellow-worker was the afterwards famous *Erasmus*. He was an orphan, and poor. Thrust, when a youth, into a monastery by dishonest guardians, who had tried to force him to become a monk in order to get his little stock of money, he rebelled when he came of age, left the monastery, and, in spite of poverty, earning his living by giving lessons to private pupils, worked his way up to such learning as the University of Paris could give. Wanting to master Greek, and too poor to go to Italy, he came, at the invitation of an English nobleman, to learn it at Oxford. He was just turned thirty (the same age as Colet), but already hard study, bad lodging, and the harassing life of a poor student, driven about and ill-used as he had been, had ruined his health. His mental energy rose, however, above bodily weakness, and he came to Oxford, eager for work, and perhaps for fame. He found the little circle of Oxford students zealous for the new learning and those Greek studies on which his own mind was bent. He became known at once to Colet, Grocyn, and Linacre, and fell in love with More. His own words will best describe what he thought of them.

He comes to Oxford.

Makes friends with Colet and Thomas More.

'When' (he wrote in a letter) 'I listen to my friend '*Colet*, it seems to me like listening to Plato himself. In '*Grocyn*, who does not admire the wide range of his knowledge? What could be more searching, deep, and refined than the judgment of *Linacre?* Whenever did 'nature mould a character more gentle, endearing, and 'happy than *Thomas More's?*

Comes under Colet's influence.

During the time he spent at Oxford, he had many talks and discussions with Colet. He had come to Oxford full of the spirit of the revival of learning, but not yet hating the scholastic system as Colet did, nor ready at once to take to Colet's views on the need of reform. He had not yet got the religious earnestness which made Colet what he was. But Colet's fervour was infectious; and before Erasmus left Oxford, he saw clearly what a great work Colet had begun.

Colet urged him to stay at Oxford, and at once to join him in his work; but Erasmus said he was not ready—he must first go to Italy to study Greek, as others had done. But, he said, 'When I feel that I have the needful firmness and strength, I will join you.' How effectually he did aid him afterwards we shall presently see.

(*c*) *The Oxford students are scattered till the accession of Henry VIII.* (1500–1509).

The three friends scattered.

During the remainder of the reign of Henry VII. (nine years or thereabouts), the little band of Oxford students was scattered.

Erasmus left England in 1500 for France, on his way for Italy; but being robbed of his money by the custom-house officers at Dover, he was obliged by poverty to stay in France instead of going to Italy.

Colet went on with his work at Oxford as earnestly as ever, till he was made Dean of St. Paul's, and removed to London.

More worked his way up to the bar in London, became popular in the City, and very early in life went into Parliament.

Exactions of Empson and Dudley.

The last years of Henry VII. were marked by the discontent occasioned by the king's avarice. His two ministers, Empson and Dudley tried all kinds of schemes to exact money from the people without breaking the laws.

'These two ravening wolves' (wrote Hall the chronicler, who lived near enough to the time to feel some of the exasperation he described) 'had such a guard of false 'perjured persons appertaining to them, which were by 'their commandment empanelled on every quest, that the 'king was sure to win, whoever lost. Learned men in the 'law, when they were required of their advice, would say, '"To agree is the best counsel I can give you." By this 'undue means these covetous persons filled the king's 'coffers and enriched themselves. At this unreasonable 'and extortionate doing noblemen grudged, mean men 'kicked, poor men lamented; preachers openly, at Paul's 'Cross and other places, exclaimed, rebuked, and detested; but yet they would never amend.'

More offends Henry VII.

The robbing of Erasmus at the Dover custom-house was an instance of one of these legal robberies. Thomas More also suffered from the royal avarice. He was bold enough to speak and vote in Parliament against a subsidy which he thought was more than the king ought to claim. Whereupon his father was fined on some legal but unjust excuse, and he himself had to flee into retirement. He thought of going into a cloister, and becoming a monk; but, under the influence of Colet, who about that time was made Dean of St. Paul's, and came to live in London, he married, and waited for better days. When Erasmus came to England again in 1505, he found Colet, More, Grocyn, Linacre, and Lilly (another Oxford student who had been to Italy), all living in London. They found him the necessary means for his journey to Italy, and again he left them, promising to return, and hoping then to join them in fellow-work.

The circle of Oxford students formed again in London.

In 1509, while Erasmus was in Italy, Henry VII. died.

(*d*) *On the accession of Henry VIII. they commence their fellow-work* (1509).

The accession of Henry VIII. seemed to the Oxford students like the beginning of an Augustan age. The other sovereigns of Europe, Maximilian of Germany, Louis XII. of France, and Ferdinand of Spain, were old men, and, owing to their constant wars, poor. Henry VIII. was young and, thanks to his father's peaceful foreign policy and unjust exactions, rich. He was, as most young princes are, popular; every one hoped good things from him. The imprisonment and execution of Empson and Dudley relieved the people from fear of further exactions. He was handsome, fond of athletic sports, and, in the early years of his reign, it must be admitted, generous and open-handed. A musician, a scholar, and (however fond of pleasure) neglecting neither study nor business, of great energy having his eye everywhere and keeping the reins of government well in his hands, he seemed likely to make a great and popular king.

Hopes on the accession of Henry VIII.

By the little band of Oxford students his accession was hailed with the highest hopes. He was personally known to some of them, and known to be a friend of the 'new learning.' Colet (already Dean of St. Paul's) was soon made court preacher. Thomas More, to the delight of the citizens of London, was made under-sheriff, and a few years afterwards, such was the fondness of the king for him, that, much against his will, he was drawn into the court. Even the foreign scholar Erasmus was at once recalled from Rome and settled at Cambridge as Greek professor. There seemed now to be an open door for Revival and Reform, and all in the sunshine of the young king's favour.

The Oxford students in Court favour.

(*e*) *Erasmus writes his 'Praise of Folly'* (1511).

Erasmus, having been to Italy, was now ready to join Colet heartily in fellow-work. On his way from Italy on horseback, he planned in his mind, and on his arrival in London, before going to Cambridge, he wrote in More's house, his 'Praise of Folly,' a satire in Latin on the follies of the age, which made his name famous among the scholars of Europe.

He dressed up Folly in her cap and bells, and made her deliver an oration to her fellow-fools.

Prominent amongst the fellow-fools were the scholastic theologians whom Colet had taught him to dislike. 'Folly' described them as men who were so proud that they could define everything, who knew all about things of which St. Paul was ignorant, could talk of science as though they had been consulted when the world was made, could give you the dimensions of heaven as though they had been there and measured it with plumb and line—men who professed universal knowledge, and yet had not time to read the Gospels or Epistles of St. Paul.

Satire on the scholastic theologians.

Monks were described as shut out of the kingdom of

Monks.

heaven in spite of their cowls and their habits, while wagoners and husbandmen were admitted.

Popes.

'Folly' claimed also among her votaries *Popes* who (as Julius II. was then doing), instead of 'leaving all,' like St. Peter, try to add to St. Peter's patrimony, as they called it, fresh possessions by war, and turn law, religion, peace, and all human affairs upside down.

This bold satire did much to open the eyes of men all over Europe to the need of reform, turned the ridicule of the world upon the scholastic theologians and monks, and as a natural consequence, raised against Erasmus the hatred of those whose follies he had so keenly satirized.

This little book written, he went to Cambridge to labour as Greek professor, and also at another great work of which we shall have to say more by-and-by—his edition of the New Testament.

(*f*) *Colet founds St. Paul's School.*

Colet founds a school of the new learning.

Colet, meanwhile, went on preaching from his pulpit at St. Paul's. On his father's death he came into possession of his fortune, and nobly devoted it to the foundation of a public school by the cathedral —in which boys, instead of being crammed in the scholastic learning, were to be trained in the new learning, and instead of being taught the bad Latin of the monks, were to be taught the pure Latin and Greek which the Oxford students had imported from Italy; and lastly, instead of being flogged and driven, were to be attracted and gently led into the paths of learning.

Lilly was appointed schoolmaster. Erasmus and Linacre were set to work to write school-books, and finding that no one else seemed able to write a Latin Grammar simple and easy enough for beginners, Colet wrote one himself. In his preface he said he had aimed, for the love and zeal he had for his new school, at making his little book on the eight parts of speech as easy as he could, 'judging that nothing may be too soft nor too familiar for little children, specially learning a tongue unto them all strange,' and asking them to 'lift up their little white hands' for him, in return for his prayers for them. Compare with these gentle words the practice of the common run of schoolmasters described by Erasmus, who, too ignorant to teach their scholars properly, had to make up for it by flogging and scolding, defending their cruelty by the theory that it was the schoolmaster's business to subdue the spirits of his boys!

Excites the malice of men of the old school.

When it was noised abroad that in this new school of the Dean's, classical Latin and Greek were to be taught instead of the bad Latin of the monks, and that under the shadow of St. Paul's cathedral there was thus to be a school of the new learning, men of the old school of thought began to take alarm. More had jokingly told Colet that it would be so, for he said the school was like the wooden horse filled with armed Greeks for the destruction of barbarian Troy; and so the men of the old school regarded it. In spite of the inscription on the building—

> Schola Catechizationis Puerorum in Christi
> Opt. Max. fide et bonis literis,

—one bishop denounced it openly as a 'temple of idolatry,' and the Bishop of London began to contrive how to get Colet convicted of heresy, and so a stop put to his work.

About this time there was a convocation, and the Archbishop of Canterbury gave Colet the duty of preaching to the assembled bishops and clergy the opening sermon. He took the opportunity of urging, in the strongest and most earnest manner, the necessity of a radical reform in the morals of the clergy. He told them to their face boldly that the wicked worldly life of some of the bishops and clergy was far worse heresy than that of poor Lollards, twenty-three of whom the Bishop of London had just been compelling to abjure, and two of whom he had burned in Smithfield a few months before.

Colet's sermon on ecclesiastical reform.

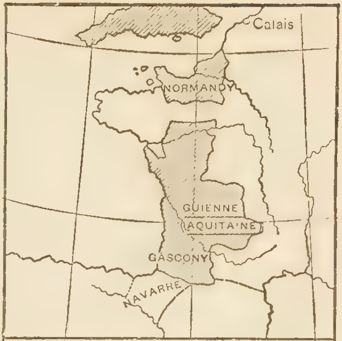
No wonder the Bishop's anger was kindled still more against Colet. He and two other bishops of the old school joined in laying a charge of heresy against him before the Archbishop, but the latter wisely would not listen to the charge. So the cause of the new learning prospered during the early years of Henry VIII.

Escapes from a charge of heresy.

(*g*) *The Continental Wars of Henry VIII. 1511-1512.*

If we look back to the section on Italy, and the summary there given of Papal and Continental politics, we shall see that it was in 1511 and 1512 that Pope Julius II. was bent upon uniting Spain, England, and Germany in a war against France. Louis XII. had got possession of Milan, and was becoming dangerous. The Pope's object was to drive Louis out of Italy. Ferdinand of Spain wanted not only to get rid of the rivalship of France in Italy, but also to annex the province of Navarre to Spain. Henry VIII.

The Holy Alliance against France.



FRENCH PROVINCES CLAIMED BY HENRY VIII.

was tempted to revive the claims of England on the Duchy of Guienne, which since the close of the Hundred Years' War had been annexed to the French Crown. The Emperor Maximilian was always anxious to enlarge his borders at the expense of France. So these princes formed what was called 'the Holy Alliance,' with the Pope at their head, against France, and in 1511 the holy war began. The campaign of that year ended in the crafty Ferdinand getting and keeping Navarre, while Henry the Eighth's invasion of Guienne miserably failed. His troops mutinied, and returned to England in utter disorder.

Henry VIII.'s first campaign.

In the spring of 1513 preparations were being made for another campaign on a greater scale. It was in these preparations that his great minister Wolsey's great talents came into play. Henry VIII. had set his heart on a brilliant invasion of France in order to wipe out the dishonour of the last campaign. He watched the equipment of his fleet, and ordered Admiral Howard to tell him 'how every ship did sail.'

Wolsey.

Just as everything was ready Julius II. died, and the Cardinal de' Medici, Linacre's fellow-student, whose acquaintance Erasmus had made in Italy, was elected Pope under the title of Leo X. The new Pope cared for literature and art and

Julius II. succeeded by Leo X.

building St. Peter's at Rome more than for war, and expressed his anxiety to bring about a peace. But Henry VIII. had set his heart upon a glorious war, and in spite of the death of the head of the Holy Alliance, and in spite also of his father-in-law Ferdinand's hanging back at the last moment, he was determined to go on. Admiral Howard in his first engagement with the French, lost his life in a brilliant exploit, and his crew, disheartened, returned to Plymouth. But still Henry VIII. set sail with the rest of the ships for Calais, with 'such a fleet as Neptune never saw before,' and from Calais he marched his army a few leagues beyond the French frontier, took some towns of small importance, and turned the French army to flight at the Battle of the Spurs.

But Henry persists in invading France.

Gains the Battle of the Spurs

He did little harm to France or good to England, but got some sort of a victory, and so gratified his vanity. There were of course great rejoicings, tournaments, and pageants, but just in the midst of them came the news that the Scotch, always troublesome neighbours in those days, before the union of the two kingdoms, had, incited by France, taken the opportunity of Henry VIII.'s absence in France to invade England, but that through the zeal and energy of Queen Catherine they had been defeated, and the King of Scots himself slain, with a host of the Scotch nobility, at the Battle of Flodden. Whereupon Henry VIII., finding nothing better to do, amid great show of rejoicing returned to England, bent upon preparing for another invasion by-and-by.

Scotch invasion of England.

Battle of Flodden.

But his father-in-law, Ferdinand, had served him so badly in these two campaigns—leaving him to bear the brunt of them, while he contented himself with taking and keeping Navarre—that the end of it was a strange shuffling of the cards. Henry VIII. made peace with Louis XII., and England and France combined to wrest back again from Spain that very province of Navarre which Henry VIII. had helped Ferdinand to wrest from France only a few years before.

Henry VIII. now joins France against Spain.

In January 1515 this unholy alliance was broken by Louis XII.'s death. He was succeeded by Francis I., who, eager, like his young rival, Henry VIII., to win his spurs in a European war, at once declared his intention that the 'monarchy of Christendom should rest under the banner of France, as it was wont to do!' A few months after, he started on the Italian campaign, in which, after defeating the Swiss soldiers at the battle of Marignano, he recovered the Duchy of Milan.

Louis XII. succeeded by Francis I.

Francis I. invades Italy, and recovers Milan.

Again both Ferdinand and Henry VIII. were made friends by their common jealousy of France. It would never do to let France become the first power in Europe.

Again England and Spain combine against France.

So during these years, instead of an Augustan age of peace, reform, and progress in the new learning and civilization, through the jealousy and lust of military glory of her kings, stirred up by the late warlike Pope and his Holy Alliance, Europe was harried with these barbarous wars!

These wars of kings against the interests Europe.

We have seen, in the chapter on France, how her national wars tended to increase the power of the Crown, and how the fact that the Crown was absolute and backed by its standing army, while it tended to keep France a united kingdom on the map, injured the nation. So it was

They tended to make kings absolute.

The example of France.

also in measure—happily only in measure—in England. These wars tended to make the king absolute. To carry them on, not only were all the hoarded treasures of Henry VII. dispersed, but fresh taxes were needed; and when all the taxes were spent that could be got legally out of votes of Parliament, Wolsey was driven to get more money by illegal means. Had the war-fever gone on a little longer—just so long as to establish the precedent of the king's levying taxes without consent of Parliament—then England might well have lost her free constitution, just as France had already done. But, happily, this was not so to be.

Narrow escape of England.

In the meantime, let us see how the Oxford Reformers acted in this crisis of European affairs, how they used all their influence to set the public opinion of the educated world against this evil policy of European princes.

Colet preaches against the wars.

Colet preached against the wars to the people from his pulpit at St. Paul's, and to the king from the pulpit of the royal chapel; and his enemies tried to get him into trouble with the king for doing so. But Henry VIII., wild as he was for military glory, was generous enough to respect the sincerity and boldness of the dean; and though not wise enough to follow his advice, refused to stop his preaching. Erasmus made known to his learned friends all over Europe this bold conduct of Colet and his hatred of war. He also, in his letters to the Pope, princes, cardinals, bishops, and influential men everywhere, protested against the false international policy which sacrificed the good of the people to the ambition of kings.

Erasmus against them too,

More also made no secret to the king that he was opposed to his conquering France, and that he hated the wars.

and also More.

(*h*) *The kind of Reform aimed at by the Oxford Reformers.*

It so happened that just at this time Erasmus was invited to the court of Prince Charles of the Netherlands (afterwards the Emperor Charles V.), and that More was also being drawn by Henry VIII. into his royal service. They both at length yielded. Erasmus became a privy councillor of Prince Charles, on condition that it should not interfere with his literary work. More became a courtier of Henry VIII. when peace was made with France, on condition that in all things he should 'first look to God, and after Him to the king.'

Erasmus made a councillor of Prince Charles.

More drawn into Henry VIII.'s service.

Both Erasmus and More, in thus entering royal service, published pamphlets or books containing a statement of their views on politics. Erasmus called his 'The Christian Prince;' More called his a 'Description of the Commonwealth of Utopia.'

Erasmus, in his 'Christian Prince,' urged that the *Golden Rule* ought to guide the actions of princes—that they should never enter upon a war that could possibly be avoided, that the good of their people should be their sole object, that it was the people's choice which gave a king his title to his throne, that a constitutional monarchy is much better than an absolute one, that kings should aim at taxing their people as little as possible; that the necessaries of life, things in common use among the lowest classes, ought not to be taxed, but luxuries of the rich, and so on: the key-note of the whole being that the object of nations and governments is the common weal of the whole people.

The 'Christian Prince' of Erasmus.

In the meanwhile, More, in his 'Utopia,' or description of the manners and customs of an ideal commonwealth ('Utopia' meaning 'nowhere'), urged just the same points. The Utopians elected their own king, as well as his council or parliament. They would not let him rule over another country as well: they said he had enough to do to govern their own island. The Utopians hated war as the worst of evils; the Utopians aimed not at making the king and a few nobles rich, but the whole people. All property belonged to the nation, and so all the people were well off. Nor was education confined to one class; in Utopia everyone was taught to read and write. All magistrates and priests were elected by the people. Every family had a vote, and the votes were taken by ballot. Thus the key-note of More's 'Utopia' was, like the 'Christian Prince' of Erasmus, that governments and nations exist for the common weal of the whole people.

More's 'Utopia.'

If we turn back to the description already given of the two points which mark the spirit of modern civilization, and judge these sentiments of Erasmus and More from that point of view, we cannot fail to see how thoroughly they entered into the spirit of the new era, and how correct and far-reaching were the reforms which they urged upon the public opinion of Europe.

They entered thoroughly into the spirit of modern civilization.

We must not leave the Oxford Reformers without trying to get a clear idea of the kind of religious reform which they urged.

We have seen that Colet's object was to set the minds of men free from the bonds of the scholastic system, by leading men back from the schoolmen to the teaching of Christ and His Apostles in the New Testament.

The character of their religious reform.

Erasmus had been all this while labouring hard in fellow-work with him. He had for years been working at, and now, in 1516, published at the printing-press at Basle, a book which did more to prepare the way for the religious reformation than any other book published during this era. This was his edition of the New Testament, containing, in two columns side by side, the original Greek and a new Latin translation of his own. He thus realized a great object, which Colet had long had in view, viz., not only to draw men away from scholastic theology, but to place before them, in all the freshness of the original language and a new translation, the 'living picture' of Christ and His Apostles contained in the New Testament. By so doing he laid a firm foundation for another great religious reform, viz., the translation of the New Testament into what was called 'the vulgar tongue' of each country, thus bringing it within reach of the people as well as of the clergy.

The New Testament of Erasmus.

'I wish' (Erasmus said in his preface to his New Testament) 'that even the weakest woman should read 'the Gospels—should read the Epistles of Paul; and I 'wish that they were translated into all languages, so 'that they might be read and understood not only 'by Scots and Irishmen, but also by Turks and Saracens. I long that the husbandman should sing portions of them to himself as he follows the plough, 'that the weaver should hum them to the tune of his 'shuttle, that the traveller should beguile with their 'stories the tedium of his journey.'

Of course this great work of Erasmus excited the opposition and hatred of the men of the old school, and especially of the monks and scholastic divines, to whom the old Vulgate version was sacred, and Greek a heretical tongue. But the New Testament went through several large editions, and when, a few years after, the learned men of the Sorbonne at Paris complained of what they called its heresies, Erasmus was able to reply triumphantly, 'You are too late in your objections. You should have spoken sooner. It is now scattered over Europe by thousands of copies!'

The kind of ecclesiastical reform urged by the Oxford Reformers.

One other point we have to fix in our minds—the attitude of the Oxford Reformers to the ecclesiastical system. We have seen that their notion of religion was that it was a thing of the heart—the love of God and man. They believed that it was intended to bind men together in a common brotherhood, not to divide them into sects. They complained how rival orders of monks and schools of theology hated one another. Christians might differ about doctrines, but they ought to agree in the worship of God and in their love of one another. Hence More in his Utopia had described the Utopians as giving full toleration to all varieties of doctrines and differences of creeds; and pictured all worshipping together in one united and simple mode of worship, expressly so arranged as to hurt the feelings of no sect among them, so that they all might join in it as an expression of their common brotherhood in the sight of God.

They aimed at a broad and tolerant Church.

It is clear that, holding these views, they were likely to urge, as they did earnestly urge, the reform of the ecclesiastical system, but that if at any time a great dissension were to arise in the Church, they would urge that the Church should be reformed and widened so as to give offence to neither party, and include both within it, and would oppose with all their might anything which should break up

And were likely to oppose schism.

its unity and cause a schism. Whether right or wrong, this would be the course which their own deep convictions would be likely to lead them to take, and this, we shall see, was the line the survivors of them did take when the Protestant struggle came on. We say 'the survivors,' because Colet did not live to work much longer. Even now, driven into retirement by the persecution of the old Bishop of London, he could do little but work at his school. And he died in 1519.

To the beginning of the Protestant movement we must now turn our attention.

CHAPTER III.

THE WITTENBERG REFORMERS.

(*a*) *Martin Luther becomes a Reformer.*

Born 1483.

MARTIN LUTHER was born in 1483, and so was 15 years younger than Erasmus and Colet, and three years younger even than their young friend More.

Sent to school, and to university.

His great-grandfather and grandfather were Saxon peasants, but his father being a younger son had left home and become a miner or slate-cutter at Mansfield in Thuringia. Both his parents were rough and hot-tempered, but true and honest at heart. Though working hard for a living, they sent their sons to school, and wishing Martin to become a lawyer, they found means to send him to the university of Erfurt. There he took his degree of M. A.

In 1505, in fulfilment some say of a vow made in a dreadful thunderstorm, when he thought his end was near, Luther, contrary to his father's wishes, left his law studies and entered the Augustine monastery at Erfurt. He inherited the superstitious nature of the German peasantry. He traced every harm that came to him through passion and temptation all alike to the Devil. His conscience was often troubled. His fasts and penances did not give him peace. He passed through great mental struggles, sometimes shut himself up in his cell for days, and once was found senseless on the floor. At length he found peace of mind in the doctrine of 'justification by faith,' *i. e.*, that forgiveness of sins, instead of being got by fasts and penances and ceremonies, is given freely to those who have faith in Christ. This doctrine he learned partly from the pious vicar-general of the monastery, partly from the works of St. Augustine, and under their guidance from a study of the Bible. From this time he accepted also other parts of the theology of St. Augustine, and especially those which, because they were afterwards adopted by *Calvin*, are now called 'Calvinistic,' such as that all things are fated to happen according to the divine will, that man has therefore no free will, and that only an elect number, predestinated to receive the gift of faith, are saved.

Becomes a monk.

Adopts the theology of St. Augustine.

It is well to mark here that these Augustinian doctrines were, in fact, a part of that scholastic theology from which the Oxford Reformers were trying to set men free. In not accepting them they differed from Luther. But they and Luther had one thing in common. They alike held that religion did not consist in ceremonies, but was a thing of the heart; that true worship must be in spirit and in truth.

And in this differed from the Oxford Reformers.

In 1508 Luther was removed from Erfurt to the Augustinian monastery at Wittenberg, and soon after made preacher there at the University recently founded by the Elector of Saxony.

Luther removes to Wittenberg.

In 1510 he was sent on an errand for his monastery to Rome. There he found wicked priests performing masses in the churches, ignorant worshippers buying forgiveness of sins from the priests, and doing at their bidding all kinds of penances; and he came back zealous, like Colet, for reform, and with the words 'the just shall live by faith' more than ever ringing in his ears.

Visits Rome.

He had been preaching and teaching the theology of St. Augustine at Wittenberg several years with great earnestness, when in 1516 he read the new edition of the New Testament by Erasmus. The works of Erasmus had an honourable place on the shelves of the Elector of Saxony's library, and his New Testament was the common talk of learned men at the universities, even at this youngest of them all —Wittenberg. Luther eagerly turned over its pages, rejoicing in the new light it shed on old familiar passages; but what a disappointment it was to him as by degrees he discovered that there was a great difference between Erasmus and himself—that Erasmus did not accept those Augustinian doctrines on which his own faith was built! He knew that Erasmus was doing a great work towards the needed reform, and this made it all the more painful to find that in these points they differed. He was 'moved' by it, but, he wrote to a friend, 'I keep it to myself, lest I should play into the hands of his enemies. May God give him understanding in his own good time!'

Reads the New Testament of Erasmus.

Finds out the difference in their theology.

This is a fact that in justice to both should never be forgotten. Luther was conscious of it from the first, and it had this future significance, that if Protestantism (as it afterwards did) should follow Luther and adopt the Augustinian theology, Erasmus and the Oxford Reformers never could become Protestants. Luther might wisely try to keep it secret, but if matters of doctrine should ever come to the front, the breach between them was sure to come out.

(*b*) *The Sale of Indulgences* (1517).

While Luther was preaching Augustinian doctrines at Wittenberg, and Erasmus was hard at work at a second edition of his New Testament, pressing More's 'Utopia' and his own 'Christian Prince' on the notice of princes and their courtiers, expressing to his friends at Rome his hopes that under Leo X. Rome might become the centre of peace and religion, Europe was all at once brought by the scandalous conduct of Princes and the Pope to the brink of revolution.

Leo X.'s schemes to get money by indulgence.

Leo X. wanted money to help his nephew in a little war he had on hand. To get this money he offered to grant indulgences or pardons at a certain price, to those who would contribute money to the building of St. Peter's at Rome. The people were still ignorant enough to believe in the Pope's power to grant pardons for sins, and there was no doubt they would buy them, and so gold would flow into the coffers of Rome. There was one obstacle. Princes were growing jealous of their subjects' money being drawn towards Rome. But Leo X. got over this obstacle by giving them a share in the spoil. He offered Henry VIII. one-fourth of what came from England, but Henry VIII. haggled and bargained to get a third! Kings had made themselves poor by their wars, and a share in the papal

Offers princes a share in the spoil.

spoils on their own subjects was a greater temptation than they could resist.

Erasmus in his 'Praise of Folly' had described indulgences as 'the crime of false pardons,' and now in every letter and book he wrote he bitterly complained of the Pope and Princes for resorting to them again.

Erasmus writes bitterly against it.

He wrote to Colet:—

> 'I have made up my mind to spend the remainder of my life with you in retirement from a world which is everywhere rotten. Ecclesiastical hypocrites rule in the courts of princes. The Court of Rome clearly has lost all sense of shame; for what could be more shameless than these continued indulgences!'

And in a letter to another friend, he said:—

> 'All sense of shame has vanished from human affairs. I see that the very height of tyranny has been reached. *The Pope and Kings count the people not as men, but as cattle in the market!*'

But though Erasmus numbered among his friends Leo X., Henry VIII., Francis I., and Prince Charles, he found them deaf to his satire, and unwilling to reform abuses which filled their treasuries.

But popes and kings will not listen.

They would not listen to Erasmus. It remained to be proved whether they would listen to Luther!

(*c*) *Luther's Attack on Indulgences* (*1517.*)

Wittenberg was an old-fashioned town in Saxony, on the Elbe. Its main street was parallel with the broad river, and within its walls, at one end of it, near the Elster gate, lay the University, founded by the good Elector—Frederic of Saxony—of which Luther was a professor; while at the other end of it was the palace of the Elector and the palace church of All Saints. The great parish church lifted its two towers

Wittenberg.

Tetzel comes near, selling indulgences.

from the centre of the town, a little back from the main street. This was the town in which Luther had been preaching for years, and towards which Tetzel, the seller of indulgences, now came, just as he did to other towns, vending his 'false pardons'—granting indulgences for sins to those who could pay for them, and offering to release from purgatory the souls of the dead, if any of their friends would pay for their release. As soon as the money chinked in his money-box, the souls of their dead friends would be let out of purgatory. This was the gospel of Tetzel. It made Luther's blood boil. He knew that what the Pope wanted was people's money, and that the whole thing was a cheat. This his Augustinian theology had taught him; and he was not a man to hold back when he saw what ought to be done. He did see it. On the day before the festival of All Saints, on which the relics of the Church were displayed to the crowds of country people who flocked into the town, Luther passed down the long street with a copy of ninety-five theses or statements against indulgences in his hand, and nailed them upon the door of the palace church ready for the festival on the morrow. Also on All Saints' day he read them to the people in the great parish church.

Luther's theses against indulgences.

He is backed by the Elector of Saxony.

It would not have mattered much to Tetzel or the Pope that the monk of Wittenberg had nailed up his papers on the palace church, had it not been that he was backed by the Elector of Saxony. The Elector was an honest man, and had the good of the German people at heart. Luther's theses laid hold of his mind, and a few days after it is said that he dreamed that he saw the monk writing on the door of his church in letters so large that he could read them eighteen miles off at his palace where he was, and that the pen grew longer and longer, till at last it reached to Rome, touched the Pope's triple crown and made it totter. He was stretching out his arm to catch it when he awoke! The Elector of Saxony, whether he dreamed this dream awake or asleep, was at least wide awake enough to refuse permission for Tetzel to enter his dominions.

Philip Melanchthon comes to Wittenberg.

Then came a year or two of controversy and angry disputes; and just at the right time came *Philip Melanchthon*, from the University of Tubingen, to strengthen the staff of the Elector's new University at Wittenberg—a man deep in Hebrew and Greek, a half-disciple of Erasmus—already pointed out as likely to turn out 'Erasmus II.,' of gentle, sensitive, and affectionate nature, the very opposite of Luther, but yet just what was wanted in another Wittenberg Reformer—to help in argument and width of learning; to be in fact to Luther, partly what Erasmus had been to Colet. In the weary and hot disputes which now came upon Luther, Melanchthon was always at his elbow, and helped him in his arguments; while the fame of Luther's manly conduct and Melanchthon's learning all helped to draw students to the University from far and near, and so to spread the views of the Wittenberg Reformers more and more widely.

(*d*) *The Election of Charles V. to the Empire* (*1519*).

Death of Maximilian. Candidates for the Empire.

Suddenly, in 1519, the noise of religious disputes was drowned in the still greater noise of political excitement Maximilian died, and a new Emperor had to be elected. Prince Charles, who was now King of Spain also, wanted to be Emperor; so did Francis I., though a Frenchman; so did Henry VIII., claiming that, though England was not a subject of the Empire, the English language was a German tongue, while French was not. The princes of the Empire wanted the Elector of Saxony to be Emperor, but he was the one man who cared most for the interests of Germany, and had least selfish ambition.

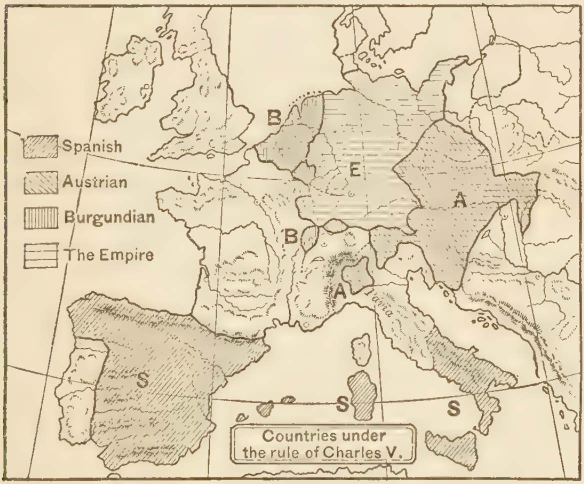
Charles V. elected through the influence of the Elector of Saxony

It was a question which of the three princes could bribe a majority of the seven Electors. Henry VIII. did not risk enough to give himself a chance. It was not really likely that, however much they might be bribed, the Electors, who were all German princes, would choose a Frenchman. The Elector of Saxony practically decided the election in favour of Prince Charles. The following letter of Erasmus, who was a councillor of Prince Charles, will show what manner of man the good Elector was.

> 'The Duke Frederic of Saxony has written twice to me in reply to my letter. Luther is supported solely by his protection. He says that he has acted thus for the sake rather of the cause than of the person (of Luther). He adds, that he will not lend himself to the oppression of innocence in his dominions by the malice of those who seek their own, and not the things of Christ.' . . . 'When the imperial crown was offered to Frederic of Saxony by all (the Electors), with great magnanimity he refused it, the very day before Charles was elected. And Charles never would have worn the imperial title had it not been declined by Frederic, whose glory in refusing the honour was greater than if he had accepted it. When he was asked who he thought should be elected, he said that no one seemed to him able to bear the weight of so great a name but Charles. In the same noble spirit he firmly refused the 30,000 florins offered him by our people (*i. e.* the agents of Charles). When he was urged that at least he would allow 10,000 florins to be given to his servants, "They may take them" (he said) "if they like, but no one shall remain my servant another day who accepts a single

piece of gold." The next day he took horse and departed, lest they should continue to bother him. This was related to me as entirely credible by the Bishop of Liege, who was present at the Imperial Diet.'

Would that Charles V. had followed throughout his reign the counsels of the good Elector to whom he owed his crown! Charles's grandfather, Ferdinand, had died only a few months before, and he was himself in Spain, settling the affairs of his new kingdom, when he was elected. We have now to mark what power had fallen into the hands of this prince of the House of Hapsburg. On the map are distinguished the Austrian, Burgundian, and Spanish provinces which came under his rule. We must remember, too, how the ambition of Spain was to increase its Ital-


Spanish
Austrian
Burgundian
The Empire
B
E
A
B
A
Pavia
S
S
S
Countries under the rule of Charles V.

Extent of Charles V.'s rule.

ian possessions, and that, as head of the 'Holy Roman Empire,' he was also nominally King of Italy!

(*e*) *Luther's Breach with Rome* (1520).

While these political events had been absorbing attention, the religious disputes between Luther and the papal party had been going on.

Luther finds himself a Hussite.

They had this singular effect upon Luther: they drove him to see that his Augustinian views were identical with those of Wiclif and Huss. He was astonished, as he described it, to find that 'he was a Hussite without knowing it; that St. Paul and Augustine were Hussites!'

The fact was that Wiclif and Huss, like Luther, had in a great degree got their views from the works of St. Augustine: they had so adopted many of the doctrines which belonged to what we have said is now called the *Calvinistic* theology.

This discovery hastened on his quarrel with the Pope. The Pope and Councils had denounced Wiclif and Huss as heretics; therefore Popes and Councils were not infallible. This was the conclusion to which Luther came. Luther had declared himself a Hussite, therefore the papal party contended he must, like Huss, be a heretic; and the long continuance of the Hussite wars being taken into account he must be a dangerous heretic. So the Pope made up his mind to issue a Papal Bull against Luther.

Rumoured Papal Bull against Luther.

When rumours of this reached Luther, so far from being fearful, he became defiant. He at once wrote two pamphlets.

The first was addressed '*To the Nobility of the German nation.*' It was published, in both Latin and German, in

1520, and 4,000 copies were at once sold. If we bear in mind what has already been said in the section 'On the Ecclesiastical System,' the chief points of the pamphlet will be easily understood.

Luther's pamphlet to the nobility of the German nation

The gist of it was as follows:—

'To his Imperial Majesty and the Christian Nobility of the German nation, Martin Luther wishes grace, &c. The Romanists have raised round themselves walls to protect themselves from reform. One is their doctrine, that there are two separate estates; the one *spiritual*, viz. pope, bishops, priests, and monks; the other *secular*, viz. princes, nobles, artisans, and peasants. And they lay it down that the secular power has no power over the spiritual, but that the spiritual is above the secular; whereas, in truth, *all* Christians are spiritual, and there is no difference between them. The secular power is of God, to punish the wicked and protect the good, and so has rule over the whole body of Christians, without exception, pope, bishops, monks, nuns and all. For St. Paul says, 'Let *every* soul (and I reckon the Pope one) be subject to the higher powers.' [Luther was writing this to the secular princes, and they were likely to listen to this setting up of their authority above that of the clergy. He was writing also to the German nation, and he knew well how to catch their ear too.] 'Why should 300,000 florins be sent every year from Germany to Rome? Why do the Germans let themselves be fleeced by cardinals who get hold of the best preferments and spend the revenues at Rome? Let us not give another farthing to the Pope as subsidies against the Turks; the whole thing is a snare to drain us of more money. Let the secular authorities send no more annates to Rome. Let the power of the Pope be reduced within clear limits. Let there be fewer cardinals, and let them not keep the best things to themselves. Let the national churches be more independent of Rome. Let there be fewer pilgrimages to Italy. Let there be fewer convents. Let priests marry. Let begging be stopped by making each parish take charge of its own poor. Let us inquire into the position of the Bohemians, and if Huss was in the right, let us join with him in resisting Rome.'

LIBRAR K. C. K. BAPT.

And then, at the end, he threw these few words of defiance at the Pope:—

> 'Enough for this time! I know right well that I have sung in a high strain. Well, I know another little song about Rome and her people! Do their ears itch? I will sing it also, and in the highest notes! Dost thou know well, my dear Rome, what I mean?'

His other pamphlet—his 'other little song about Rome'—was an attack upon her doctrines. It was entitled '*On the Babylonish Captivity of the Church*,' and in it he repeated his condemnation of indulgences, denied that the supremacy of the Pope was of divine right, declared the Pope a usurper, and the Papacy the kingdom of Babylon; and then, turning to matters of doctrine, boldly reduced the sacraments of the Church, by an appeal to Scripture, from seven to three—Baptism, Penance, and the Lord's Supper. He ended this pamphlet in as defiant a tone as the other. 'He heard' (he said) 'that Bulls 'and other terrible Papistical things were being prepared, 'by which he was to be urged to recant or be declared a 'heretic. Let this little book be taken as a part of his 'recantation, and as an earnest of what was to come!'

Another pamphlet on the 'Babylonish Captivity of the Church.'

While the printing-press was scattering thousands of copies of these pamphlets all over Germany, in Latin for the learned, and in German for the common people, the Bull arrived, and the Elector of Saxony was ordered by the Pope to deliver up the heretic Luther. The question now was, What would Luther do with the Bull, and the Elector with Luther?

The Bull arrives.

(*f*) *The Elector of Saxony consults Erasmus, December* 6, 1520.

Much at this moment depended on what the good Elector of Saxony would do. Well was it that the fate of Luther lay in the hands of so conscientious a prince. He and his secretary Spalatin were at Cologne, where Charles V., after his recent coronation, was holding his court. Melanchthon and Luther were in constant correspondence with Spalatin. Melanchthon wrote that all their hopes rested with the prince, and urged Spalatin to do his best to prevent Luther being crushed,—'a man,' he said, 'who seemed to him almost inspired, and whom he dared to put not only above any other man of the age, but even above all the Augustines and Jeromes of any age!' So enthusiastic a disciple of the bold Luther had the gentle Melanchthon become! Spalatin did his best.

Aleander, the Pope's nuncio, tries to win over the Elector of Saxony.

Aleander, the Pope's nuncio, and supposed author of the 'Bull,' was at Cologne, wild against Luther and doing all he could to get the Emperor to make common cause with the Pope. He knew that the Elector of Saxony stood in the way, and did his best to win him over. Erasmus, being one of the Emperor's council, also was there, and Aleander knew that he, too, was against the crushing of the poor monk, and if he could have bribed him over with a bishopric, or secretly poisoned him, there is evidence that it would most likely have been done. The Elector was bent upon doing what was right and best for Germany and for Christendom, and anxious to have the advice of the best and the wisest men upon the course he should take. Erasmus had written to the Wittenberg Reformers, praising their zeal, but advising more gentleness. Melanchthon had sent the letter from Erasmus to the good Elector, who now wanted to consult Erasmus confidentially himself. Spalatin managed the interview. It was in the Elector's rooms at the inn of 'The Three Kings' that they met, the Elector, Erasmus and Spalatin. The Elector asked of Erasmus through Spalatin, in Latin, as they stood over the fire, 'What he really thought of Luther?' and fixed his eyes eagerly upon him as he waited for an answer. Erasmus said, with a smile, 'Luther has committed two crimes! He has hit the Pope on the crown and the monks on the belly.'

The Elector asks advice of Erasmus.

This was exactly the truth. The Elector's dream had come true. Luther's great pen had reached to Rome and touched the Pope's triple crown. Leo X. was a sort of patron of Erasmus, but that did not hinder Erasmus from condemning the Bull. The monks were his old enemies, bitter against the new learning, haters of himself and Colet as well as Luther, because they saw their craft was in danger as men's eyes became more and more opened. Therefore Erasmus could afford to smile a bitter sarcastic smile at the expense of both Pope and monks. Before he left he wrote down on paper a short statement of his opinion that the monks' hatred of the new learning was at the bottom of their zeal against Luther, whilst only two universities had condemned him; that Luther's demand to be properly heard was a fair one; and that being a man void of ambition, he was less likely to be a heretic. At all events the views of Luther's opponents were worse than his; all honest men disapproved of the Bull; and clemency was what ought to be expected of the new Emperor.

The advice of Erasmus.

While thus he spoke in favour of fair dealing with Luther, he at the same time found much fault with Luther's violent way of going to work and his abusive language. The result of the interview was reported to Luther. Melanchthon and he were

The Elector follows it.

well satisfied with the advice given by Erasmus. They considered that it had great weight in strengthening the Elector in favour of Luther. At all events the Elector followed it in two points—he remained firm in defence of Luther, and at the same time he wrote and recommended to Luther more of that gentleness the want of which had displeased Erasmus.

(*g*) *Luther burns the Pope's Bull, December* 10, 1520.

Perhaps the advice of the Elector to Luther came just too late! The meeting with Erasmus at the inn of the 'Three Kings' at Cologne was on December 5. In the meantime Luther had been making up his mind what to do, and on the 10th he did it, we may suppose before the posts from Cologne had reached him.

Luther burns the Bull.

Excited, and as Melanchthon said, seeming almost inspired, conscious of right and also of power, Luther wished all Europe to see that a German monk could dare to defy the Pope. Had there been a mountain at Wittenberg he would have lit his bonfire on the top, and let the world, far and near, see the Pope's Bull blaze in its flames. But there was not even a hill in that flat country. So in solemn procession, at the head of his fellow-doctors and the students of the university, he marched through the Elster gate, and there, outside the city walls, in presence of the great German river Elbe, he burned the Bull, and as many Roman law books as he could find. His burning the Bull against himself was a personal act of defiance. His burning the Roman law books was a public declaration that the German nation ought not to be subject to the jurisdiction of Rome. Amid the cheers of the crowd. Luther returned to his rooms. That a man of hot temper, fastening by his daring act the eyes of all Europe upon himself, assuming as it were the leadership of a national crusade against the Pope of Rome, should be for the moment carried away by excitement into extravagance was only natural. Luther was in fact greatly excited, and on the next day, in his crowded lecture-room, let himself utter wild words, declaring that those who did not join in contending against the Pope could not be saved, and that those who took delight in the Pope's religion must be lost for ever. He then wrote an abusive reply to the Bull, hurling all sorts of bad names against the Pope, and pushing his Augustinian doctrines to so extreme a point as to amount to fatalism.

Erasmus fears revolution.

Grand as is the figure of Luther on the page of history, as, in December 1520, he dared to make himself the mouth-piece of Germany, demanding reform, threatening revolution if reform could not be had, it must be admitted that he was playing with fire. Was not the train already laid for revolution? Will not such wild words lead to still wilder acts of the ignorant peasantry? Sober-minded lookers on, like Erasmus, feared this. He had feared from the first that Luther's want of discretion might bring on a 'universal revolution,' and had therefore urged moderation. Instead of moderation had come still wilder defiance. 'Now,' he wrote, 'I see no end of it but the turning upside down 'of the whole world. . . . When I was at Cologne I 'made every effort that Luther might have the glory of 'obedience and the Pope of clemency, and some of the 'sovereigns approved this advice. But lo and behold, 'the burning of the Decretals, the "Babylonish captivity;" those propositions of Luther, so much stronger 'than they need be, have made the evil apparently 'incurable.'

CHAPTER IV.

THE CRISIS.—REFORM OR REVOLUTION.—REFORM REFUSED BY THE RULING POWERS.

(*a*) *Ulrich von Hutten and Franz von Sickingen.*

THE fears of Erasmus were well founded. There were wilder spirits in Germany than Luther.

Not far north of Worms, where the first Diet of the Emperor Charles V. was going to meet, was the castle of Ebernburg, where the bold knight *Franz von Sickingen* had gathered round him the chiefs of these wild spirits. Franz himself was a wild lawless knight, living upon private war, hiring out himself and his soldiers to fight out private quarrels, and, like his relative *Goetz von Berlichingen*, popular because of his bravery and rough justice. Goetz and Franz might be said to be in many respects, the Robin Hoods of Germany.

The Robin Hoods of Germany side with Luther.

Such a man as Franz was sure to side with Luther though he had already engaged himself and his soldiers for hire to the Emperor Charles V. One of his guests at the castle was *Ulrich von Hutten*, a knight like himself, but there was this difference between them. Hutten's pen was his lance. Placed like Erasmus in his youth in a cloister, he too had torn himself from it and taken to a literary life. Not so learned, but with even keener wit than Erasmus, neglect, poverty, and suffering had embittered more his wild warlike spirit. His pen was ever ready to be dipped in gall, and following the example set by Erasmus in his 'Praise of Folly,' he tried to mend the world by satire. He had been to Rome, and in Latin rhyming verses he held up her vices to scorn, He pointed out

Ulrich von Hutten.

His satire upon Rome.

in these rhymes how German gold flowed into the coffers of the 'Simon of Rome.' He sneered at the blindness and weakness of the German nation in letting themselves be the dupes of Rome. When Luther came upon the scene, Hutten's heart was stirred. He made his resolve to rush into the fight against Rome The fears and tears of his family could not stop him. He was disinherited for doing it, but do it he must. Hitherto his rhymes had been in Latin, and thus only read by the learned. Henceforth he would write in German for the Fatherland.

His German popular rhymes against Rome.

In Latin hitherto I've written,
A tongue all did not understand:—
Now call I on the Fatherland,
The German nation, in her mother tongue,
To avenge these things.

'Germany must abandon Rome. Liberty for ever! The die is cast.' This was the cry of his popular German rhymes.

To Luther he held out the hand of devoted friendship:—

Servant of God, despair not!
Could I but give a helping hand,
Or in these matters counsel thee,
So would I spare nor goods
Nor my own blood!

And on the eve of the Diet of Worms he issued his '*Complaint and exhortation against the extravagant and unchristian power of the Pope*,' in rhyme, in which he exposed the tyranny, wealth, worldliness, and cost to Germany of Rome, and tried to lash up the German people into rebellion against it. Now was the time to free Germany from the Roman yoke. He appealed to the Emperor as the natural leader of the German nation. It would redound

Demands freedom from Rome.

to his honour. He alone should be the captain. All free Germans would serve with gladness the saviour of their country. 'Help, worthy king, unfurl the 'standard of the eagle, and we will lift it high. If warn'ings will not do, there are steeds and armour, halberts 'and swords, and we will use them!'

There was something pathetic in this cry of the Germans to their Emperor. The very peasants of the '*Bundschuh*' we saw would have made him their leader, had he listened to their appeal against their feudal oppressors, and now the German nation was beseeching him to head their rebellion against Rome! These were but outbursts of a general yearning for unity among the German people. They felt the necessity of central power as the only cure for the evils under which they suffered, and now when the quarrel of Luther and the Pope had brought ecclesiastical grievances to the top, the question was whether Charles V., in his first Diet, would side with the German nation, or sell the German nation for his own selfish objects to the Pope!

Small chances of reform.

Meanwhile appearances were ugly. Luther wrote to Spalatin: 'I expect you will return with the stale news that there is no hope in the court of Charles.' Erasmus wrote: 'There is no hope in Charles; he is surrounded by Sophists and Papists.' But Hutten hoped against hope. Such men are sanguine. If Charles would do his duty to Germany in the Diet of Worms, all might be well. If not, Hutten was ready for revolution. Sickingen had soldiers; with the pen and the sword they would rise in rebellion.

(*b*) *The Diet of Worms meets 28th January, 1521.*

Let us, for a moment, leave these wilder spirits and try to understand what it was that the more sober-minded of the German people expected from the Diet of Worms.

'Agenda' at the Diet of Worms.

Happily there is among English State papers a copy of 'Agenda,' or as it is headed, 'A memory of divers matters to be provided in the present Diet of Worms.'

The following are the chief heads, and in these we cannot fail to recognize what in former chapters we have found to be the real grievances of the German nation.

To stop private war.

(1) To make some ordinance that no man without consent of the Emperor and Electors shall for any personal cause presume to declare war as in times past. On this the cities and towns are determined to stick fast.

To settle disputes.

(2) To settle certain disputes between various parties. (There be above thirty bishops at variance with their temporal lords for their jurisdiction.)

To provide central power in the Emperor's absence.

(3) The Emperor to provide a vicar and council in his absence. If the Duke of Saxony will not take the charge, there will be great difficulty in finding one who will please the generality, for enmities are so numerous.

Martin Luther.

(4) To take notice of the books and descriptions made by Friar Martin Luther against the Court of Rome. The which Friar Martin, of the Elector of Saxony and other princes is much favoured.

We have here a list of the chief grievances before noticed. (1) The evil of the constant private wars of the nobles, especially to the commerce of the towns. (2) The constant quarrels between the civil and ecclesiastical powers. (3) The want of a central government. (4) The Lutheran complaints against Rome. Only the grievances of the poor peasants find no voice!

Perhaps it was not likely they should. They had no friends at court. They had tried to make their voice heard sword in hand, and had not their rebellions been quelled and their standard of the *Bundschuh* trodden in the dust? Had not even Joss Fritz been lost sight of for years? It was not their silent grievances, but the more noisy ones which were to be heard at the Diet.

No hope for the peasantry

The Diet was opened by Charles V. on the 28th January, 1521.

The first business was the appointment of a Council of Regency to manage the affairs of the Empire during the Emperor's projected absence in Spain. Then came the establishment of an imperial chamber, and the granting of an impost or tax to defray the expenses of the government.

These political matters were proceeding, when one day in February on which a tournament was to be held and the Emperor's banner was hoisted ready for the lists, the princes were called together to hear read a brief just arrived from Rome. This brief exhorted the Emperor to add the force of law to the Pope's Bull against Luther by an imperial edict. The Emperor had now an opportunity of showing that the unity of the Church was as dear to him as to the Emperors of old. He wore the sword in vain if he did not use it against heretics, who were far worse than infidels. So urged the Pope. The Emperor had already had Luther's books burned in the Netherlands, and he now produced to the princes an edict commanding the rigorous execution of the Bull in Germany. He was evidently ready to yield to the wishes of the Pope, but it was needful to consult the Electors. Some of the Electors were of course not pre-

Brief from Rome about Luther

The Electors hesitate to sanction the edict against Luther.

pared to accept the proposal of the Emperor. In order to persuade them, Aleander, the papal nuncio, delivered at another session of the Diet a speech nine hours in length, in which he inveighed against the heresies of Luther, urged that he should be condemned unheard, and declared that 'unless the heresy were stopped, Germany would be reduced to that frightful state of barbarism and desolation which the superstition of Mahomet had brought upon Asia.' The Electors seemed to be swayed by his eloquence. They cared little for Luther's doctrinal heresies, nay, they were willing to sacrifice the heretic if the grievances of the German nation against Rome could but be remedied. But these grievances were too real to be passed over so easily.

The Diet, after further delay, appointed a committee to draw up a list of these grievances. Meanwhile the speech of Aleander had been reported to Hutten, who was staying, as we said, at the castle of Franz von Sickingen, a few miles from Worms. It stirred his wrath to think of Luther's being condemned unheard. At once, on the spur of the moment, he dipped his pen in gall, and wrote letters of violent invective against the papal nuncio and the bishops assembled at Worms. One of them was addressed to the Emperor, declaring that the hope of Germany had been that he would free her from the Romish yoke and put an end to the papal tyranny, and contrasting with these high hopes 'so great an Emperor, the king of so many peoples, cringing willingly to slavery, without waiting even till he is forced.'

Hutten adjures the Emperor not to yield to Rome.

'What!' he exclaimed, 'has Germany so ill deserved of thee that with thee, not fighting for thee, it must go to the ground; lead us into danger! Lead us into battle and fire! Let all nations unite against us, all peoples rush upon us, so that at least we may prove our courage in danger! Don't let us, cringing and unmanly, without battle, lie down like women and become slaves!'

Such was the shrill cry of scorn which the course things were taking at Worms called forth from Hutten.

When the list of grievances was brought in at a future sitting of the Diet, the debate was resumed. The complaints against Rome were so strongly put that they made a deep impression on the Diet. The Electors recovered from the effects of the nuncio's speech. The Prince Electors who sided with Luther urged that 'it 'would be iniquitous to condemn a man without hearing 'him, and that the Emperor's dignity and piety were 'engaged that, should Luther retract his errors, those 'other matters should be recognized on which he had 'written so learnedly and Christianly, and that Germany 'should, by the authority of the Emperor, be freed from 'the burdens and tyrannies of Rome.' They urged also the necessity of granting Luther a safe-conduct, and summoning him to appear before the Diet to defend himself.

The Emperor gave way, and on March 6 the summons and safe-conduct were issued, and an imperial herald sent to bring Luther to Worms.

Luther summoned to Worms.

(*c*) *Luther's journey to Worms* (*1521*).

The herald arrived at Wittenberg, and on April 2 Luther set out for Worms.

That he went with his mind fully made up not to give way or patch up his quarrel with the Pope was shown by this. He left in the hands of *Lucas Cranach*, the great painter of Wittenberg, a series of wood-cuts prepared by Cranach, with explanations in German at the foot, added by

Luther's Antithesis of Christ and Antichrist.

himself, depicting the Antithesis, or Contrast between Christ and the Pope. It was, in his own words, 'a good book for the laity.'

He and Hutten, to widen the circle of their readers and make their appeals to the Fatherland heard by all classes, had scattered their pamphlets in German all over Germany. Luther now called in the aid of these wood-cuts to make his appeal still more popular and telling on the multitude.

Luther had found himself, to his own surprise, following in the track of the Hussites of Bohemia. He had openly avowed it. Indeed, he seems to have been fond of copying some of their acts, perhaps to mark the identity of his object with theirs. They had commenced with burning the Papal Bull, and so had Luther. It was recorded in the Hussite chronicles that one of the things which roused the people in Bohemia against the Pope was the painting by tow Englishmen on the walls of an inn at Prague of two pictures, one representing Christ entering Jerusalem meek and lowly, on an ass; the other the Pope proudly mounted on horseback, glittering in purple and gold. Luther and Cranach had improved upon this example, and produced a series of wood-cuts with a precisely similar intention.

Christ refusing a crown was contrasted with the Pope in his tiara. Christ in the crown of thorns, being beaten and mocked, was contrasted with the Pope on his throne, in all his magnificence. Christ washing the disciples' feet was contrasted with the Pope holding out his sacred toe to be reverently kissed by his courtiers. Christ healing the sick was contrasted with the Pope watching a tournament. Christ bending under the burden of his Cross was contrasted with the Pope borne in state on men's shoulders. Christ driving the money-changers out of the temple was contrasted with the Pope selling his dispensations, and with piles of money before him. Christ's humble entry into Jerusalem was contrasted with the Pope and his retinue in all their glory, but the road they are travelling is shown in the background of the picture to lead to hell. Finally, the Ascension of Christ is contrasted with the descent of the Pope, in his triple crown and papal robes, headlong under an escort of demons and hobgoblins, into the flames of the bottomless pit.

That he left behind him this 'good book for the laity,' to be published in his absence, was a mark of the defiant spirit in which he went to Worms. But underneath this spirit of defiance, it must never be forgotten, was a deep feeling that he was fighting in the cause of God. 'My dear brother,' he said to Melanchthon, in parting, 'if I do not come back, if my enemies put me to death, you will go on teaching and standing fast in the truth; if *you* live, *my* death will matter little.'

Luther sets off for Worms.

Amidst the tears of his friends, he stepped into the covered wagon and commenced his journey. Others, too, thought he was going out to his death. At one place which he passed there was a priest who kept, hanging up in his study, a portrait of Savonarola. He took down the picture from the wall and held it up in silence before Luther. Luther was moved. 'Stand firm,' said the priest, 'in the truth thou hast proclaimed, and God will as firmly stand by thee.' The journey took him twelve days. He had to pass through Erfurt, the scene of his mental struggles. He spent a night at the old convent, and the next day, contrary to the terms of his safe-conduct, fearlessly preached in the little church of the convent to crowds of people. Earnest tender words were his that day, setting forth that true religion is a

His journey.

thing of the heart, and not of ceremonies or penances moving multitudes to tears, and making converts. In the midst of it a portion of the crowded building gave way, and people were terrified by the crash. In his wild imagination he set it down to Satan trying to hinder him. All through his journey he seemed to meet with the Devil at every step. If he was fatigued and ill, it was Satan who brought him low; but, he wrote from Frankfort to Spalatin, 'Christ lives, and we will enter Worms in spite of all the gates of Hell and the powers of the air!'

These things did but prove his sense of the importance of the work in which he was engaged. His wild enthusiasm grew out of what was true heroism. The noise, the worship of the crowd, the danger and excitement, would have turned the head of any mere enthusiast. When men are excited they must needs do strange things; and of course on this journey to Worms strange things were done. At one place a parody on the Litany was produced, like the parodies made by modern revolutionary agents:—'Have mercy upon the Germans. 'From the tyranny of the Roman Pontiff deliver the Germans. From the insatiable avarice of the Romans 'deliver the Germans. That Martin Luther, that upright 'pillar of the Christian faith, may soon arrive at Worms, 'we beseech Thee to hear us. That the zealous German 'Knight, Ulrich Hutten, the defender of Martin Luther, 'may persevere in upholding Luther, we beseech Thee to 'hear us,' and so on. Of course, wherever the procession stopped at night the inns were full; there were crowds, vulgar merry-making, and music. Luther himself played upon his flute, and doubtless, as his enemies reported, there was no lack of jollity over the beer. All this was in the very nature of things. The

Popular excitement.

point to mark is this—it did not turn the head of Luther.

When news of the enthusiasm occasioned by Luther's progress to Worms arrived at the city, the papal party became alarmed. Charles V. sent his private confessor with messages of compromise, but Luther refused to listen till he reached Worms. It was well he did, for the safe-conduct was nearly expired, and there was danger of treachery. Luther's friends, too, became alarmed. Even Spalatin was afraid of his life if he entered Worms, and reminded him of the fate of Huss, whose safe-conduct availed him little. Luther's noble reply was, 'Huss was burned, but not the truth with him.' He afterwards told the Elector of Saxony, when recalling to mind his own marvellous courage, 'The 'Devil saw in my heart that even had I known that 'there would be as many devils at Worms as tiles upon 'the house-roofs, still I should joyfully have plunged in 'among them!'

Luther's heroic firmness.

As he drew near the city, six knights and a troop of horsemen of the princes' retinues went out to meet him; and under their escort, the Emperor's herald leading the way, and a great crowd draggling through the streets beside him, in his covered wagon and monk's gown, Luther entered Worms.

He enters Worms.

(*d*) *Luther before the Diet.*

The next day, towards evening, he was brought before the Diet. The Emperor presided. Six Electors were present, and a large number of archbishops, bishops, and nobility—about two hundred in all. There was a pile of Luther's books on the table.

Luther's first appearance before the Diet.

The official then formally put to Luther two questions:

'Do you acknowledge these books to be yours?' 'Do you retract the heretical doctrines they contain?'

He asks for time to consider his answer.

Luther replied, 'I think the books are mine;' and, after the titles had been read over, 'Yes, the books are mine.' As to the second question, he said it would be rash for him to reply before he had had time for reflection.

They give him till the next day.

The papal party, who had expected to find Luther raging like a lion, began to think he was going to give way. His deportment had been meek and modest. The young Emperor turned to one of his courtiers and said, 'This man will never make a heretic of me.' Luther's request for time was allowed till the next day, and on condition that he gave his reply *vivâ voce.*

He was taken back to his inn. People did not know what to make of it. Some thought he would retract. But, in the din and bustle around him, Luther wrote a letter to one of his friends. 'I write to you from the 'midst of the tumult. . . . I confessed myself the author 'of my books, and said I would reply to-morrow touching 'my recantation. *With Christ's help, I shall never re*'*tract one tittle!*'

Excitement in Worms.

That night there was excitement and noise in the streets; quarrels between opposing parties in the crowd, and soldiers rushing about.

The next day Luther prepared himself. He was heard to pray earnestly, and had his Bible open before him. At four o'clock the herald came to bring him before the Diet. The streets were full of people, and spectators looked down from the tops of the houses as the herald led him through passages and private ways to escape the crowd. It was dark before they reached the hall and torches were lit. As Luther walked up the hall several noblemen met him with encouraging words, amongst whom was the old General *Frundsberg*, of whom we shall hear more hereafter.

The hall was crowded, and some time was lost before the Princes and Electors were settled in their places.

The official at length—two hours after time—opened the proceedings.

Luther's second appearance before the Diet.

'Martin Luther, yesterday you acknowledged the books published in your name. Do you retract those books or not? . . . Will you defend all your writings or disavow some of them?'

Luther replied, in a speech which seemed to his enemies long and rambling; but according to his own and Spalatin's version of it, the pith of what he said was this:—

Luther's speech.

Most serene Emperor! Illustrious Princes, &c.,—At the time fixed for me yesterday evening I am here, as in duty bound, and I pray God that your Imperial Majesty will be pleased to listen, as I hope graciously, to these matters of justice and truth. And should I from inexperience omit to give to any one his proper titles, or offend against the etiquette of courts, I trust you will pardon me, as one not used to them.

'I beseech you to consider that my books are not all of the same kind.

'(1) There are some in which I have so treated of faith and morals that even my opponents admit that they are worthy to be read by Christian people. If I were to retract these, what should I do but—I alone, among all men—condemn what friends and foes alike hold to be truth!

'(2) Others of my books are against the papacy and popish proceedings—against those whose doctrine and example have wasted and ruined Christendom, body and soul. This no one can gainsay, for the experience of all men, and the complaints of all, bear witness that through the laws of the Pope and the teaching of men the consciences of the faithful have been vexed and wronged, and the goods and possessions of this great German nation by faithless tyranny devoured and drained—yes, and will without end be devoured again! . . . . Now if I were to retract these, I should do nothing but strengthen this tyranny. To its vast unchristian influence I should not only open the windows but the door also, so that it would rage and spoil more widely and freely than it has ever yet dared to do. Under cover of this my recantation, the yoke of its shameless wickedness would become utterly unbearable to the poor miserable people, and it would be thereby established and confirmed all the more if men could say that this had come about by the power and direction of your Imperial Majesty, and of the whole Roman Empire. Good heavens! what a great cloak of wickedness and tyranny should I be!

'(3) The third kind are those books which I have written against some private persons, as, for instance, against those who have undertaken to defend the Roman tyranny, and to oppose what I thought to be the service of God, against whom I know I have been more vehement than is consistent with the character and position of a Christian. For I do not set myself up as holy. I do not, however, dispute for my own life, but the doctrine of Christ. I cannot retract even these books, but I am ready to listen to anyone who, can show me wherein in these books I have erred.'

Here Luther paused. He had spoken in German with, as he thought, modesty, but with great fervour and determination. The perspiration stood on his brow, he was exhausted with the effort of speaking: but when the Emperor, who hardly understood German, ordered him to repeat what he had said in Latin, after whispering to a privy counsellor of the Elector of Saxony, who stood by him, he obeyed, and repeated his words in the language which not only Charles but the papal nuncio could understand.

Repeats his speech in Latin.

And now, as they understood more fully what he said, the anger of the papal party was naturally more kindled. When he had done, the orator of the Court, betraying his hostility by his manner, declared that Luther's answer was not a fair one. They were not there to dispute about things that had long ago been settled by Councils. He demanded a plain, ungarnished answer. Would he recant or not?

Luther replied:—

Refuses to recant.

> 'Well, then, if your Imperial Majesty requires a plain answer, I will give one without horns or teeth! It is this; that I must be convinced either by the testimony of the Scriptures or clear arguments. For I believe things contrary to the Pope and Councils, because it is as clear as day that they have often erred and said things inconsistent with themselves. I am bound by the Scriptures which I have quoted; my conscience is submissive to the word of God: therefore I may not, and will not, recant, because to act against conscience is unholy and unsafe. So help me God! Amen.'

One other attempt was made to get him to yield, but in vain, and night coming on, the Diet was adjourned to the following morning, to hear the decision of the Emperor. The princes retired through the dark streets to their several inns; Luther to his. Frederic of Saxony sent for Spalatin and expressed his approval of Luther's conduct, except that perhaps he had spoken too boldly.

The Emperor decides against Luther.

Next morning, the 19th April, the Emperor sent to the princes a message written by his own hand, in French, declaring his intention to proceed against Luther as an avowed heretic, and calling upon the princes to do the same. An attempt was then made by the papal party to induce the Emperor to rescind the safe-conduct of Luther. The precedent of Huss was cited. 'Why should not Luther, with Huss, be burned, and the Rhine receive the ashes of the one as it had those of the other? This proposal met with strong opposition from the princes, and was negatived.

But while these discussions were going on in the Diet, murmurs were heard out of doors. The proposal to withdraw the safe-conduct roused the righteous indignation of men like Hutten to the point almost of frenzy. A placard was found posted on the walls of the Town Hall, stating that 400 knights and 8,000 foot were ready to defend Luther against the Romanists. It had no signature, but underneath were written the ominous words, '*Bundschuh, Bundschuh, Bundschuh.*' Rumours came of murmurs and movements of the people in distant parts of Germany. Franz von Sickingen, a few miles off the city, was said to be prepared to take to the sword, and the rumours of this inspired terror in the minds of the papal party, as it gave some colour of likelihood to the threats of Hutten and the placard.

Threats of revolution.

Under the influence of the fears thus excited, the Electors prevailed upon the Emperor to give a few days more for a further attempt to shake Luther's firmness.

The Electors urge delay.

All was done that could be done to shake it, but without avail. Luther's mind was made up. Let the Pope and the Emperor do their worst, he would stand by his conscience and the Scriptures. At last, on the 26th of April, he received orders from the Emperor to depart on the following day. Twenty-one days were given him for his return to Wittenberg, and on the morrow, escorted as before by the imperial herald, Luther left the crowded streets of Worms and commenced his journey homewards.

Luther leaves Worms.

What Luther had done at Worms for Germany.

He left Worms the hero of the German nation. He single-handed had fought the battle of Germany against the Pope. He had hazarded his life for the sake of the

Fatherland. It was this which made Luther's name a household word with the Germans for ages to come. There is no name in the roll of German historic heroes so German, national, and typical as Luther's.

and for Christendom.

But Luther fought a battle at Worms not only for Germany but Christendom—not only against the Pope, but against all powers, religious or secular, who seek to lay chains upon the human mind and to enthrall the free belief of the people. Against the Emperor as well as the Pope, against all powers that be, he asserted the right of freedom of conscience.

(*c*) *Edict against Luther.*

No sooner had Luther left Worms than the papal nuncio set himself to work to perfect his triumph. Luther had not recanted, therefore the Emperor must issue an edict against him.

Fears of the papal party.

The threatenings of Hutten had at first made the papal party nervous. They thought that he and Sickingen had really ready a force of soldiers to make good their threats. Everywhere the feeling of the German nation in favour of Luther and against the Pope was apparent, and nowhere more so than at Worms. They felt themselves on dangerous ground.

Rumours of Luther's capture.

Luther, a few days before leaving the city, wrote an address to the German princes, containing an account of the proceedings at the Diet. This was soon scattered over Germany by the printers, and, just as the minds of the Germans were thus excited in favour of Luther, the rumour spread from city to city, that in spite of his safe-conduct, Luther was captured and had been cruelly treated. Popular indignation was thus roused; murmurs rose against the Emperor among the princes as well as the common people. Again the papal party feared nothing less than a general riot against the emperor and his ecclesiastical advisers, headed by Hutten and his friends.

But at length news came that Luther was safe in friendly hands, having been secretly carried off to the castle of the Wartburg, in Thuringia, and kept there in safety by his own friends. As the days went by, the papal party gathering courage, began to laugh at Hutten's threats as bluster, and strained every nerve to hasten on the issue of the imperial edict against Luther.

The Elector of Saxony leaves Worms.

The Elector of Saxony saw the turn things were taking. He saw that Charles was won over by the Pope. He wrote to his brother that it was not only 'Annas and Caiaphas, but Pilate and Herod also,' that had combined against Luther, and not caring to remain where he could do no good, he left Worms.

Treaty between Charles V. and the Pope.

In fact Aleander, the papal nuncio, had triumphed. On May 8 a treaty was signed between Charles V. and the Pope, in which they mutually promised to have the same friends and the same enemies, the Pope agreeing to side with the Emperor, and to exert all his powers to drive the French out of Milan and Genoa, and the Emperor, as the price of the Pope's alliance, promising to employ all his powers against Luther and his party.

The edict issued against Luther.

Aleander had triumphed, and accordingly prepared an edict against Luther. It required some cleverness to get the sanction of the Electors. The edict was produced and read unexpectedly in the Emperor's own apartments to such of the Electors as remained in Worms, and received their hasty approval without discussion. The next Sunday, as

Charles V. was in church, Aleander brought the official copies, and then and there obtained the imperial signature. He took care to date the edict on May 8, 1521, *i. e.*, on the day when the treaty with the Pope was signed, though it was not really signed till some days after, and in the meantime the Elector of Saxony had left.

The secretary of Charles V., *Valdez*, a friend of Erasmus, writing from Worms on May 13, 1521, to a Spanish correspondent, concludes his letter with these remarkable words:

Letter from Valdez, the Emperor's secretary.

> 'Here you have, as some imagine, the end of this tragedy, but I am persuaded it is not the end but the beginning of it. For I perceive the minds of the Germans are greatly exasperated against the Romish See, and they do not seem to attach much importance to the Emperor's edicts; for since their publication, Luther's books are sold with impunity at every step and corner of the streets and market-places. From this you will easily guess what will happen when the Emperor leaves.
>
> 'This evil might have been cured with the greatest advantage to the Christian Republic, had not the Pontiff refused a general council, had he preferred the public weal to his own private interests. But while he insists that Luther shall be condemned and burned, I see the whole Christian Republic hurried to destruction unless God himself help us. Farewell.'

The secretary of Charles V. naturally laid all the blame on the Pope. He little knew how much his master also was to blame. The Elector of Saxony was not far wrong when he hinted that if the Pope and his nuncios were acting the part of Annas and Caiaphas, Charles V. was acting the part of Pilate and Herod.

Let us try to unravel the entangled skein of political motives which influenced his conduct and his treaty with the Pope.

(*f*) *Political reasons for the decision at Worms.*

Rivalship between Spain and France.

We have seen how the great continental struggle had long been between France and Spain, and how Italy was the battle-field; how both claimed Naples and Milan; how France had been the first to invade Italy; how France and Spain at one time agreed to share Naples between them; how France got Milan, and then, after the two had quarrelled over the prey, Spain got Naples; how then they had joined again with the Pope and Germany in the league of Cambray against Venice; and how, lastly, the robbers quarrelling again over the spoil, the Pope united Spain, Germany, and England with himself in a holy league to drive France out of Italy, and so France again lost Milan. Then came the succession of young Francis I. to the throne of France, his boast that he would make France the master of Europe, as she was wont to be, his brilliant campaign of 1515 in which he gained the battle of Marignano against the Swiss, and soon after recovered Milan. Then came the struggle for the Empire, and the beginning of the ascendancy of Spain in Europe by Charles V.'s accession to the German throne.

Intrigues of princes.

France the common enemy of the Pope, Spain, and England.

In the political combinations which followed, it was the fate of Francis to be left out in the cold. Leo X. was anxious to league himself in close alliance with Charles V., and by his aid to drive the French out of Italy. Henry VIII. was also exceedingly anxious to form a close alliance with Charles V. His marriage with Charles' aunt, Catherine of Arragon, was already a link between England and Spain. Henry wanted to bring about another by a contract of marriage between Charles V. and the young Princess (afterwards queen) Mary, although she was already engaged to the Dauphin of France. Charles V., in his turn was equally anxious to form such alliances as would strengthen his position against France. He was jealous of the conquests of Francis I. in Italy, and as Emperor of Germany considered himself entitled to Milan, which Francis had conquered. An alliance, therefore, with the Pope and England against France was most to his purpose, but it did not suit his purpose that Henry VIII. should know it.

All the princes were playing a double game and trying to outwit one another. Henry coquetted with Francis in order to make Charles fall in with his wishes out of jealousy. Charles was coquetting both with France and England, proposing marriage with a French princess while he was negotiating with Henry respecting the Princess Mary, and worst of all, while he really intended to marry the Infanta of Portugal. He cared far more for Spain than he did for Germany, and by this match he hoped to unite some day Portugal and Spain. Henry VIII. devised an interview with Francis. Charles was jealous and came over to England. After this meeting with Charles, Henry embarked for France, and met Francis on what, from the grandeur of the preparations, was called the 'Field of the Cloth of Gold.' Immediately afterwards he again met Charles at Gravelines, and did his best to secure his object with Charles while he kept Francis in the dark. But Charles chose a little longer to play fast and loose.

In the meantime the Pope also was playing a double game. Whether to ally himself with Francis, who was preparing his army for another descent upon Italy, or with Charles V. and Henry VIII. against Francis, he kept an open question, though his preference was for the latter plan, if only he could bring Charles V. to his terms; the chief of them being that Charles should help him to put down the heretic Luther.

The course which things took at the Diet of Worms was ruled by these political intrigues.

The papal party triumphed. The Emperor, as we have seen, concluded an alliance on May 8 with the Pope against France and against Luther.

Reform refused by the ruling powers from political motives.

The consequence was that Europe was to be given over once more to the ambitions and wars of its rival princes. All chances of reform, for the present, were gone. The Diet of Worms came to an end without having accomplished the work which Germany expected from it. Worst of all, the Emperor, instead of siding with Germany against the Pope, had chosen for his private purposes to side with the Pope against Germany.

It is true a council of regency had been established, with the Elector of Saxony at its head, to manage the affairs of the Empire while the Emperor was busied with quelling a rebellion in Spain, and with his wars in Italy. But no decisive steps had been taken to stop those private wars which were the curse of Germany, and of which the cities so bitterly complained. No decisive steps had been taken to remedy the ecclesiastical grievances of which the princes complained. The grievances of the much enduring peasantry had not even been talked of. And as the worst sign of the times, Luther had been condemned by both Pope and Emperor.

The fears of Erasmus were fulfilled, and his bitter words justified by the result. 'Ecclesiastical hypocrites reign in the courts of princes . . . The Pope and Princes treat the people as cattle in the market.'

The reform, both of the Oxford and of the Wittenberg

Reformers, had been refused by the ruling powers. There was nothing left but revolution.

CHAPTER V.

REVOLUTION.

(*a*) *The Prophets of Revolution* (*1522*).

Popular feeling against the Edict.

THE edict of the Emperor issued at the Diet of Worms was published all over Germany. But the papal party were astonished to find how very little people thought of it. The Germans thought a great deal more of the bold conduct of Luther. So that the end of it was that the edict was treated with very much the same neglect as the Pope's Bull. Luther's books were burned in some places under the eye of the Emperor, Everywhere else they were read all the more.

Luther in the Wartburg.

And another thing happened which the papal party had not foreseen. They had for the moment silenced Luther. He was safe in the castle of the Wartburg, and silent, too, albeit he was hard at work at what would do more to spread the spirit of reform than anything else, viz. translating the Bible into the mother tongue of the Fatherland.

In his absence wilder spirits take the lead.

Meanwhile the absence of Luther from his wonted place at Wittenberg did not take away the firebrand as they thought it would, but put it in the hands of the mob. In Luther's absence wilder spirits came to the top. Monks left the convents and went to trades. Under the leadership of Carlstadt, the form of public worship was changed. Excited and half-crazy men, carried away by their zeal, set themselves up as prophets and preached strange doctrines.

At Zwickau, under the range of the Erzgebirge, south of Wittenberg, near Bohemia, lived a weaver of the name of *Claus Storch.* He and some of his comrades fancied they were inspired. They mistook their own excited imaginations for messages from heaven. They wanted no priests, for they were themselves prophets, no Bible, for they were themselves inspired, and they went about preaching violent changes, and exciting the crowds who listened to them to violent deeds.

The prophets of Zwickau.

Driven away from Zwickau by the authorities, some of them came to Wittenberg, where the people were already making great changes under the leadership of Carlstadt. Carlstadt was carried away by their zeal, and so were the people. Riots were raised. People went about smashing the images in the churches, and even Melanchthon, in Luther's absence, was half inclined to believe in the prophets, though they preached the uselessness of learning and universities.

These things came to the ear of Luther in his retreat at the Wartburg. He at once saw how all this delusion and madness would injure the cause of the Reformation. At the risk of his life he left his place of concealment. He suddenly appeared at Wittenberg in his old pulpit. He entreated his old flock to calm their excitement; and not without avail. After ten months' absence, the familiar sound of his voice soothed their passions. They recognized him once more as their leader.

Luther comes back to Wittenberg,

The prophets came to visit him—and this is a proof of their sincerity—expecting him at once to admit their claims. Luther did not doubt that they were inspired, but warned them lest their inspiration should come from Spirits of Evil. One of them, with the voice and tones of an enthusiast, stamping his feet, and striking his hands on the table, gave vent to his horror at the suggestion; and then, gathering up his dignity, in a tone which almost shook the common sense of Luther, said solemnly, 'That thou mayst know, O Luther, that I am inspired by the Spirit of God, I will tell thee what is passing in thy mind.' And then as Luther, really for the moment half carried away by his impressive manner, was beginning to waver, 'It is' (he added), 'That thou art ready to think that my doctrine is true.' To which Luther, suddenly recovering himself replied, 'The Lord rebuke thee, Satan! The God whom I worship will soon put a stop to your spirits.' And with these parting words he dismissed the prophets of Zwickau.

and confronts the prophets.

His common sense prevails.

Order was restored at Wittenberg. The Scriptures were again acknowledged as the rule of faith, and before the end of the year the New Testament was published in the German tongue. The Lutheran Reformation was severed for ever from the wilder reforms of Carlstadt and the prophets of Zwickau; and the latter were soon driven from Wittenberg, to spread their doctrines in other places where there was no Luther to withstand them.

The prophets driven from Wittenberg.

One of the disciples of Storch at Zwickau was *Münzer*, but instead of going to Wittenberg, *he* went first into Bohemia, and then all over that part of Germany where Joss Fritz had been. He became very soon the prophet of the peasantry.

Münzer becomes the prophet of the peasantry.

We must look even upon Münzer as honest and sincere, though wild. He thought himself inspired, and preached like a prophet. Along with many reforms which Luther also urged, he claimed for the people the right of having divine worship performed in their own language instead of in the Latin of the priests. He preached a crusade against all who opposed the gospel, and urged a resort to the sword if preaching would not do. Driven from city to city, he went more and more among the peasants; and who shall blame him if he took up their grievances? Was it not natural? His own father, it is said, had fallen a victim to a quarrel with his feudal lord. He began to think himself the chosen messenger of heaven to avenge their wrongs; and as he preached from place to place amongst the peasantry, and others like him followed in his track, it was not strange if it stirred up again in the minds of the disciples of Joss Fritz recollections of the days of the *Bundschuh*.

(*b*) *The end of Sickingen and Hutten*, (1523).

The council of regency appointed at the Diet of Worms to represent the Empire during the Emperor's absence in Spain (whither he had gone to quell a rebellion of his subjects) was made up of princes who had more or less sympathy with Luther.

The Council of Regency under the Elector of Saxony strives to avert the storm,

Frederic of Saxony was at the head of it. It was the nearest approach to a central government which had been formed. It was thoroughly German and national in spirit, and aimed at thoroughly national objects. It aimed not at carrying out the edict against Luther, but at obtaining from future diets those reforms which had been refused at Worms. It aimed at putting down private wars and the establishment of public peace.

But it had no power at its back to carry out its intentions. Its efforts to obtain something like union among the powers of Germany in the work of reform were fruitless; and so were its efforts to put down private wars.

Knights like Franz von Sickingen saw in it an attempt of the princes to put down the influence of their order. Its attempt to obtain the means to pay for national objects by a system of customs—duties on luxuries imported into Germany from abroad—was taken by the merchants of the towns to be an invasion of their rights. So it was unpopular and powerless, though its intentions were good.

but meets with opposition.

Its powerlessness to preserve the public peace was soon shown in a great private war which was waged by Franz von Sickingen in 1522–3 against the Archbishop of Treves. The knight besieged Treves with his army of 5,000 foot-soldiers and 1,500 knights, and declared that he came to bring the people freedom from the Pope and priests, and to punish the archbishop for his sins against God and the Emperor.

Franz von Sickingen takes to the sword,

What could be a stronger example to the peasantry to take to the sword than such an act of the popular knight!

He counted upon the people of the town aiding him from within the walls, but was disappointed. The city held out till some neighbouring princes came to its rescue with an army of 30,000 men. On their approach, Franz retired to his castle of Landshut, there not being time to reach that of Ebernburg. There he was himself besieged. The cannon of the princes were powerful enough to batter down the solid walls, which before the use of but is defeated and killed.

artillery would have been impregnable. He held out for months, till at last a solid tower fell into a heap of ruins, and a breach was made in the walls. Franz himself was wounded and dying when his conquerors entered the castle. They upbraided him for disturbing the peace of the Empire. 'I am going,' he said, as he lay upon the floor, dying, 'to render an account to a greater than the Emperor;' and soon after he expired. His friend Hutten died in the same year, while trying to urge other knights to aid Sickingen, and this was the end of the knights of Ebernburg Castle.

Hutten's death.

They had threatened to reform the Empire by the sword. The peasantry had looked to them as their best knightly friends. They had done much by their pens and swords, their voice and example, to stir up warlike feeling among the peasantry, but their end came before the peasants had got any help from them. In the meantime it was also clear that the council of regency was unable to preserve the public peace, as well as to bring about the needed reform.

The peasantry got nothing from the knights.

If help was to come neither from the Emperor and the council of regency, nor from the knights, where were the peasantry to turn next? Was not the time ripe for rebellion?

(*c*) *The Peasants' War* (1525).

We must turn again to the map on which are marked the districts where lay the smouldering embers of the *Bundschuh*, waiting only for the match to light them up again. On the opposite map are marked the districts in which, one after another, the explosions came. The connexion between the two maps will be seen at a glance. Joss Fritz had kept the embers alive by his secret work in Swabia. The expulsion of Carlstadt from Wittenberg had sent him into the towns on the Rhine and in Franconia to stir up discontent and a spirit of rebellion, not only against Rome, the priests and monks, but also against Luther, through whose influence he had been expelled. Münzer had been driven from city to city, and thence into Southern Germany, to carry on the work of stirring up rebellion.

Carlstadt and Münzer stir up rebellion.

The train was indeed laid, and in November, 1524, the match was put to it in the very places where it was laid the deepest. The match was a little thing. The much-enduring peasantry of Swabia, and most of all, those about the Boden See (Lake Constance) needed but the last straw to break the back of their endurance. It was a holiday, and the peasants on the estates of the Count von Lüpfen were resting at home or taking the day for work on their own land. Orders came from the Count that they should turn out and gather snail-shells for the folk at the Castle. It was the very littleness of the thing which made it so unbearable. They rose up in arms, and so did their neighbours in the valleys round. Soon all Swabia was in insurrection.

Insurrection of the peasantry in Swabia.

The council of regency sent ambassadors to mediate between the peasants and their lords of the Swabian League. But it was of no use. They had not power to keep the public peace. Neither party listened to them. The peasants put forth twelve articles in which they stated their demands. Here, in brief, is a list of them. A mere glance will show that they were the old demands of the days of the *Bundschuh*, with a few additions.

1. The right to choose their own pastors.
2. They would pay tithe of corn, out of which the pastors should be paid, the rest going to the use of the parish.—But small tithes, *i. e.*, of the produce of animals, every tenth calf, or pig, or egg, and so on, they would not pay.
3. They would be free, and no longer serfs and bondmen.
4. Wild game and fish to be free to all.
5. Woods and forests to belong to all for fuel.
6. No services of labour to be more than were required of their forefathers.
7. If more service required, wages must be paid for it.
8. Rent, when above the value of the land, to be properly valued and lowered.
9. Punishments for crimes to be fixed.
10. Common land to be again given up to common use.
11. Death gifts (*i. e.*, the right of the lord to take the best chattel of the deceased tenant) to be done away with.
12. Any of these articles proved to be contrary to the Scriptures or God's justice, to be null and void.

Their twelve articles.

From this list of most substantial grievances we may well gather what the peasants were aiming at. We see how they aimed, like simple men, at the removal of the practical grievances and hardships of their life. But their demands were not at all likely to be granted. For instance, if they had the choice of pastors they would choose men like Münzer, and Carlstadt, and Storch, and perhaps even wilder spirits than these, so that neither the Pope nor Luther would be likely to concede that demand. Nor, of course, would the proud feudal lords like to lose their game and the forced labour of their serfs, and to meet their peasants on equal terms as free men, any more

Not likely to be granted by either Pope, nobles, or Luther.

than the slave-holders of America liked to have slavery abolished. We may guess, too, how the ecclesiastics would tremble to hear of their small tithes being taken away, and other pastors being chosen instead of themselves.

Had the feudal lords granted proper and fair reforms long ago, they would never have heard of these twelve articles. But they had refused reform, and they now had to meet revolution. And they knew of but one way of meeting it, namely, by the sword.

Swabian peasants crushed in April 1525.

The lords of the Swabian League sent their army of foot and horsemen under their captain, George Truchsess. The poor peasants could not hold out against trained soldiers and cavalry. Two battles on the Danube, in which thousands of peasants were slain, or drowned in the river, and a third equally bloody one in Algau, near the Boden See, crushed this rebellion in Swabia, as former rebellions had so often been crushed before. This was early in April 1525.

Insurrection on the Neckar, April 1525.

But in the meantime the revolution had spread further north. In the valley of the Neckar a body of 6,000 peasants had come together, enraged by the news of the slaughter of their fellow peasants in the south of Swabia. The young Count von Helfenstein, a friend of the Archduke Ferdinand, who had married a natural daughter of the late Emperor Maximilian, lived at the castle in the town of Weinsberg, in this district. He seems to have so far lost his head in these days of terror as to have cut the throats of some peasants who met him on the road. This enraged them the more. The town and castle were stormed and taken by the peasants, under their leaders, Florian Geyer, Wendel Hipler, and Little Jack Rohrbach. The

Count offered a large sum of money for a ransom, but the stern reply of the peasants was, 'he must die though he were made of gold.'

While the peasants were plundering the castle, the monastery, and the houses of the priests, the leaders held a council. Hipler advised moderation. He hoped that the smaller lords would, after all, side with the peasants. But Little Jack was a man of another kind. In the dead of night he held a council of his own, and doomed every knight and noble in Weinsberg to immediate death. As day was breaking the Count and other noble prisoners were led forth, surrounded by a circle of pikes with their steel points inward. The tears and pleadings of the Countess, with her babe in her arms, availed nothing. The peasants stood in two opposite ranks, with a passage between the points of their pikes. A piper of the Count mockingly led the way, inviting his late master to follow on a dance of death. The Count and nobles were compelled to follow. The ranks closed upon them, and they were soon pierced to death. A wild peasant woman stuck her knife into the Count's body, and smeared herself with blood. And so, unknown to the other leaders and to the masses of the peasantry, 'Little Jack,' on that terrible morning, had revenged the thousands of his comrades slain by the Swabian lords, blood for blood.

The peasants' revenge for Swabian slaughter.

A yell of horror was raised through Germany at the news of the peasants' revenge. No yell had risen when the Count cut peasants' throats, or the Swabian lords slew thousands of peasant rebels. Europe had not yet learned to mete out the same measure of justice to noble and common blood. But the eye of history cannot so be blinded. It records that about a month after, Truch-

The retaliation of the nobles, May 1525.

sess, the captain of the Swabian League, came northwards, and fell upon this band of peasants with his more disciplined soldiers and horsemen. One night, after a bloody battle, in which several thousand peasants were slain, the piper of Weinsberg was recognized amongst the prisoners—he who had piped to the dance of death at the murder of the Count von Helfenstein. Truchsess and the new Count von Helfenstein, who was with him, had him fastened with an iron chain about two feet long to an apple tree. With their own hands they and other nobles helped to build up a circular pile of wood round their victim, and then they set fire to the pile. It was night; and amid the groans of wounded and dying peasants on the battle-field around them, and the drunken revelry of the camp, was heard the laughter of these nobles as they watched their victim springing shrieking from point to point of the fiery circle within which he was slowly roasted to death. Such was the revenge of nobles upon peasants.

Insurrection in Franconia.

But the revolution spread, and the reign of terror spread with it. North and east of the valley of the Neckar, among the little towns of Franconia, and in the valleys of the Maine, other bands of peasants, mustering by thousands, destroyed alike cloisters and castles. Two hundred of these lighted the night with their flames during the few weeks of their temporary triumph. And here another feature of the revolution became prominent. The little towns were already, under the preaching of Carlstadt and such as he, passing through an internal revolution. The artisans were rising against the wealthier burghers, overturning the town councils, and electing committees of artisans in their place, making sudden changes in religion, putting down

Revolution in the towns of Franconia.

the Mass, unfrocking priests and monks, and in fact, in the interests of what they thought to be the gospel, turning all things upside down.

A few extracts from the diary of a citizen of the free imperial fortified town of Rothenburg, on the Tauber, may serve to fix on the mind a clear impression of the Peasants' War, as it seemed to a citizen of a Franconian town during the course of the events which he noted in his log-book in this terrible year 1525.

Diary of a citizen of Rothenburg.

March 19.—The Carlstadt sect being favoured by the magistrates, Carlstadt himself came to Rothenburg, preached here, and wanted to become a citizen.

March 21.—Thirty or forty peasants bought a kettle-drum and went about proudly, insolently, and mischievously, up and down the city.

March 23.—About 400 peasants assembled.

March 24.—All citizens were called to the Rathhaus and enjoined to stand by the honourable council. Only twenty-six do so! The rest elect a committee of thirty-six. Messengers are sent to the peasants to inquire their plans. The peasants replied that they were not all collected yet. Letters come from Markgraf Casimir, and are read to the people, offering help, and to come in person to make peace. Some of the people treated the message with scorn and laughter.

This evening, between five and six, the head of the image of Christ on the Cross is struck off, the arms broken and the pieces knocked about the churchyard.

March 25.—The committee of thirty-six frighten the council into submission.

March 26, *Sunday*.—The priest driven from the altar and his mass book thrown down. The peasants deploy themselves before the Galgen-thor.

March 27.—The priest insulted, and his book thrown down whilst performing mass.

March 28.—700 peasants assembled, and force other peasants to join them.

March 31.—The peasants have increased to 2,000. Lorenz Knobloch having promised to be a captain, has gone out to them. Messengers from the Imperial Council came to make peace, but without result.

April 4.—The oil lamps thrown down during the sermon. The peasants go about plundering cupboards and cellars.

April 8, *Good Friday.*—The service done away. No one sang or read. But Dr. Drechsel preached against emperor, king, princes and lords, spiritual and temporal, for hindering the word of God.

April 10, *Easter Day.*—Hans Rothfuchs called the sacrament idolatry. No service.

April 11.—Dr Carlstadt preached against the sacrament. At night the Kupferzell (cloister) sacked by some millers, and tables and pictures thrown into the Tauber.

April 12.—Declarations made that priests may marry.

April 13.—Dr. Carlstadt preached again against the sacraments and ceremonies.

April 14.—Some women run up and down the streets with forks, pikes, and sticks, making a row and declaring that they will plunder all priests' houses.

April 15.—Priests are obliged to become citizens for safety. Every citizen to give a gulden towards the watch, also take his turn at working at the fortifications.

April 18.—The peasants demand 200 men and 100 long spears, a culverin, heavy field-pieces, and two tents. They are refused. The peasants reply that some citizens had promised help; therefore they now demand it.

April 23.—The peasants are told they shall have a reply in writing.

April 28.—Corn given out, but only some take it. Knobloch torn to pieces by the peasants, and they pelted one another with the pieces. The peasants have been heard to say that they would soon see what the Rothenburgers were going to do!

May 1.—In the night they burned the cloister of E., plundered another, and burned the castle of C.

May 8.—The people called together by the great bell in the parish church to hear a proposal of the Markgraf Casimir to come with his lady and jewels to Rothenburg; and on the other hand to consider whether to send to the peasantry or not.

May 10.—Three neighbouring cities have gone over to the peasants. They want Rothenburg to join them, too. At 6 o'clock people are called together again, and the majority decide to send artillery and spears to the peasants.

May 12.—More monasteries are sacked. Twelve kilderkins of wine plundered by the people and drunk.

May 15.—Florian Geyer (one of the peasants' leaders) in the parish church proposes articles of alliance with the peasants for 101 years. Demanded that the committee and people should by oath and vow league themselves with the peasants. Which was done, although against the grain to some. Thus to-day Rothenburg has gone over from the Empire to the peasants! A gallows was erected in the market-place in token of this brotherhood, and as a terror to evil-doers. About 5 o'clock tents, wagons, powder are got ready and taken to the camp of the peasants, with intent to storm the castle of Wurtzburg.

300 peasants who went up on May 9 to storm the castle of Wurtzburg were all killed, part by the stones, part shot, part slain —taken like birds! (So the castle still held out.)

Casimir of Brandenburg is marching with forces to chastise the peasants.

May 19.—He burns four towns. Four peasants at L. are beheaded and seven have their fingers cut off. At N. eighteen citizens beheaded.

May 27.—4,000 peasants are slain in the valley of the Tauber by the allied powers. (The combined forces of the nobles were now joined by Truchsess, who had been victorious over the Swabian peasants.)

May 29.—8,000 more peasants slain by the allies. Three messengers are sent from Rothenburg to Markgraf Casimir, carrying a red cross and fervently begging for mercy. No surrender would be accepted but on 'mercy or no mercy.' All citizens, clergy and laity, to pay seven florins for Blood and Fire Money, or to be banished thirty miles out of the city. The city to provide some tons of powder.

June 2.—Wurtzburg retaken by the Bund.

* * * * * * * *

June 24.—Mass said again, after thirteen weeks' interruption.

June 29.—Markgraf Casimir came to Rothenburg with 800 horse, 1,000 foot, 200 wagons well equipped with the best artillery, which are placed in the market-place.

June 30.—All citizens called by herald and ordered to assemble in the market-place, and form a circle under guard of soldiers with spears. It was announced that the Rothenburgers had revolted from the Empire and joined the peasants, and had forfeited life, honour, and goods. The Markgraf and many nobles were present. Twelve citizens were called out by name, and beheaded on the spot. Their bodies were left all day in the market-place. Several had fled who otherwise would have been beheaded.

July 1.—Eight more beheaded.

. . . .

It was during the Franconian rebellion that the peasants chose the robber knight Goetz von Berlichingen as their leader. It did them no good. More than a robber chief was needed to cope with soldiers used to war. The failure of the Franconian rebel peasants was inevitable, and the wild vigour with which they acted in the moments of their brief power did but add to the cruelty with which they were crushed and punished when the tide of victory turned against them.

Insurrection in Elsass and Lorraine put down, May, 1525,

While all this was going on in the valleys of the Maine, the revolution had crossed the Rhine into Elsass and Lothringen, and the Palatinate about Spires and Worms, and in the month of May had been crushed in blood, as in Swabia and Franconia. South and east, in Bavaria, in the Tyrol, and in Carinthia also, castles and monasteries went up in flames, and then, when the tide of victory turned, the burning houses and farms of the peasants lit up the night and their blood flowed freely.

and in Bavaria, the Tyrol, and Carinthia.

Meanwhile Münzer who had done so much to stir up

Münzer heads an insurrection in Thuringia.

the peasantry in the south to rebel, had gone north into Thuringia, and headed a revolution in the town of Mülhausen, and became a sort of Savonarola of a madder kind, believing himself inspired, talking of his visions, uttering prophecies, denouncing vengeance on all who opposed what he believed to be the gospel. He exercised over the citizens something of the influence that Savonarola had done in Florence. His intense earnestness carried them away They could not help believing in him and regarding him with awe. For a while the rich fed the poor and under his eye there was almost a community of goods. But Münzer, not content with visions and his prophetic office, madly appealed to the sword. When he heard of the revolution in Swabia, he seemed to sniff the breeze like a war-horse. He issued a proclamation to the peasantry round about:

His mad proclamation.

> Arise! fight the battle of the Lord! On! on! on! Now is the time; the wicked tremble when they hear of you. Be pitiless! Heed not the groans of the impious! Rouse up the towns and villages; above all, rouse up the miners of the mountains! On! on! on! while the fire is burning; on while the hot sword is yet reeking with the slaughter! Give the fire no time to go out, the sword no time to cool! Kill all the proud ones: while one of them lives you will not be free from the fear of man! While they reign over you it is no use to talk of God! . . . Amen.
>
> Given at Mühlhausen, 1525. Thomas Münzer, servant of God against the wicked.

These were some of the words which were meant to wake up echoes in the hearts of the neighbouring miners of Mansfeld, among whom the kindred of Luther dwelt!

This was what had come of the prophets of Zwickau giving up their common sense and following visions and inspirations!

But the end was coming. The princes, with their disciplined troops, came nearer and nearer. What could Münzer do with his 8,000 peasants? He pointed to a rainbow and expected a miracle, but no miracle came. The battle, of course, was lost. 5,000 peasants lay dead upon the field near the little town of Frankenhausen, where it was fought.

Death of Münzer.

Münzer fled and concealed himself in a bed, but was found and taken before the princes, thrust into a dungeon, and afterwards beheaded.

So ended the wild career of this misguided, fanatical, self-deceived, but yet, as we must think, earnest and in many ways heroic spirit. We may well believe that he was maddened by the wrongs of the peasantry into what Luther called a 'spirit of confusion.'

The prince and nobles now everywhere prevailed over the insurgent peasants.

Luther, writing on June 21, 1525, says:—

> 'It is a certain fact, that in Franconia 11,000 peasants have been slain. Markgraf Casimir is cruelly severe upon his peasants, who have twice broken faith with him. In the Duchy of Wurtemberg, 6,000 have been killed; in different places in Swabia, 10,000. It is said that in Alsace the Duke of Lorraine has slain 20,000. Thus everywhere the wretched peasants are cut down.'

The struggle extended into Styria and Carinthia, where there had been risings before, and lingered on longest in the Tyrol. It was not till Truchsess was aided by the General George Frundsberg, the old general who had shaken hands with Luther in the Diet of Worms, that victory was secured to the higher powers.

Before the Peasants' War was ended at least 100,000 perished, or twenty times as many as were put to death in Paris during the Reign of Terror in 1793.

So ended the peasants' revolution. For two hundred and fifty years more the poor German peasantry must bear the yoke of feudal serfdom. They must wait till, in the beginning of the nineteenth century, German statesmen, awakened by the French Revolution, saw the necessity of preventing another Peasants' War by granting a timely reform.

The attitude of Luther during the Peasants' War.

Luther, throughout the Peasants' War, sided with the ruling powers. He was firm as a rock in opposing the use of the sword against the civil power. The reform he sought was by means of the civil power; and in order to clear himself and his cause from all participation in the wild doings of the peasantry, he publicly exhorted the princes to crush their rebellion. The peasants thought that in Luther (himself a peasant) they should have found a friend, but they were bitterly disappointed. He hounded on the princes in their work of blood.

That Luther should be bitter against Münzer and the wild prophets of revolution was but natural. He had seen the end from the beginning; he had left his retreat in the Wartburg four years before to quell the tumults at Wittenberg. Driven out of Wittenberg the prophets had become madder still. No doubt Europe owed much to the right-mindedness of Luther in setting his face against a resort to the sword in the cause of religious reform. Yet one cannot sympathize with Luther's harsh treatment of the peasantry and their misguided leaders. It cannot be denied that to some extent this revolution had grown up from the dragon's teeth that he himself had sown. There was a time when he himself had used wild language and done wild deeds. Erasmus had predicted that all Europe would be turned upside down in a universal revolution; and had it not come to pass? The monks blamed Erasmus and the new learning; Erasmus blamed the wildness of Luther; Luther blamed the wilder prophets. Who was to blame? History will not lay blame on Erasmus or Luther, or on the wilder prophets, or on the misguided peasantry, but on the higher powers whose place it was to have averted revolution by timely reforms. It was their refusal of reform which was the real cause of revolution. It was the conspiracy of the higher powers at the Diet of Worms to sacrifice the common weal to their own ambitious objects on which history will lay the blame of the Peasants' War.

Who was really to blame?

In the meantime let us not forget that there was one at least of the higher powers who had no share in the blame—one of them who had shown himself able to sacrifice his own ambition to the common weal, who had worked silently and hard for reform—the good Elector Frederic of Saxony. As the peasant rebellion under Münzer was going on in Thuringia, on the threshold of Saxony, he lay dying. He had no revengeful feelings. He did not urge on the slaughter of peasantry like Luther. He wrote to his brother, Duke John, who succeeded him as Elector, and who was gone with the army, to act prudently and leniently. If the peasants' turn had really come to rule, God's will be done! Only his servants were with him. 'Dear children,' he said to them, 'if I have offended any of you, forgive me, for the love of God; we princes do many things to the poor people that we ought not to do!'

Death of the Elector of Saxony, May 1525.

Soon after he received the sacrament, and died.

(*d*) *The Sack of Rome* (*1527*).

Now let us see what was the result to the higher powers themselves of the secret treaty of Worms, May 8, 1521, by which the Pope and Emperor were to join their forces against France, and to secure which the interests of the German people were deliberately sacrificed.

Alliance of the Pope and the Emperor against France.

Henry VIII. of England soon joined the alliance against France. He had secret reasons to be mentioned hereafter for keeping on good terms with Charles V. and the Pope, and so had his minister Cardinal Wolsey. Henry was tempted also with the prospect of winning back the English provinces in France, while Wolsey was flattered by the promises of Charles V. to do all he could to get him elected Pope on the next vacancy.

Henry VIII. joins it.

The first skirmishes took place between Charles V. and Francis I. in the north, but with no decisive results. Meanwhile the allied army in Italy was strengthened and that of France weakened by the Swiss soldiers under the pay of France being withdrawn, and Swiss recruits accepting imperial pay. The armies were soon in motion, and on Nov. 25, 1521, Leo X. received tidings that the allied army had triumphantly entered the city of Milan, but while the rejoicings at Rome in celebration of their triumph were still going on, the Pope suddenly died, on December 1, not without suspicion of poison.

Pope Leo X. dies, 1521.

To the surprise of everyone the Emperor's old tutor was now elected Pope under the title of Adrian VI. Charles V. had not used his influence to promote the success of Wolsey. Adrian was a Spaniard—a nominal governor in Spain while Ximenes really governed—and was more likely to serve Spanish

Adrian VI.

interests than the wily English minister. Adrian was a sternly virtuous, well-meaning pope. He would have made peace if he could. He would have reconciled the German nation by reforms if he could, but with the wish he had not the power. Everything was against him; he was old; his reign was short, and he died in 1523, to make way, not for Wolsey, for again Charles V. played his own game, but for another of the Medici, Clement VII. He was not a Spaniard, but the most powerful ally of Spain that Italy could produce among her cardinals.

Clement VII. Pope, 1523

In the meantime the Duke of Bourbon (one of the Duchies which had become subject to the French crown) rebelled from Francis I. and joined the imperial league against France. Henry VIII. also was once more tempted by a vague prospect of again annexing French provinces to the English crown, to help in the invasion of France.

Duke de Bourbon joins the league against France.

The result of this invasion was to rouse the national feeling, and therefore the power of France. It was unsuccessful, and ended in Francis I. assuming the offensive and crossing the Alps. Then came the battle of Pavia in 1524, in which the imperial armies under the Duke of Bourbon and the old German general Frundsberg gained the victory, and Francis I. was taken prisoner.

Francis I. crosses the Alps.

Made prisoner at the battle of Pavia.

Henry VIII. began now to dream not only of getting back the lost English provinces, but even of being king of France. But Charles V. had little confidence in him and Wolsey. He was playing his own game, not that of Henry VIII,

Pope Clement VII. meanwhile had expected Francis I. to win at the battle of Pavia, and, to make himself safe, had come to secret terms of alliance with him. Before the battle of Pavia he had gone so far as almost to break with the Emperor. After the battle, all Italy began to be afraid that Spanish influence would become omnipotent; so a rupture between the Pope and Spain was imminent. In the meantime the Emperor removed his royal prisoner to Spain, so taking him out of the hands of his allies. Then came the breach between Charles V. and Henry VIII., the marriage of Charles—so long intended but kept secret—to the Infanta of Portugal, instead of to the English Princess Mary; the secret peace of Henry with France. In 1526, followed the release of Francis on his oath to observe conditions from which the Pope at once formally absolved him. This produced a final breach between the Emperor and the Pope, and an alliance between the Pope and Francis against the Emperor.

Rupture between Charles V. and the Pope.

It was at this moment that the Diet of Spires was sitting. The Emperor had ordered that stringent measures should be taken against the Lutheran heresy, and that the Edict of Worms should be carried out. This was impossible. The new Elector of Saxony, and those who sided with him, were too strongly backed for such a course to be taken. Now the breach between the Pope and the Emperor came to their aid. The Emperor no longer cared to back up the interests of a Pope who had quarrelled with him, and the result of the Diet was a decree signed by Ferdinand, the brother of Charles V., in the Emperor's stead, containing the memorable clause, that 'Each state should, as regards the Edict of Worms, so live, rule, and bear itself as it thought it could answer it to God and the Emperor'

Result at the Diet of Spires.

This left the Catholic princes to do as they liked on the one hand, and the princes who favoured Luther to do as they liked on the other. From this decree of the Diet of Spires came the division of Germany into Catholic and Protestant states.

March of a German army on Rome.

This came out of the quarrel between the Pope and Emperor. The next thing was the gathering of a German army under George Frundsberg, an army composed almost entirely of Lutherans, under a Lutheran general, a host of discontented, wild, reckless men, who had survived the horrors of the Peasants' War, were inspired by hope of plunder, and inflamed by the zeal of Frundsberg, who declared, 'When I make my way to Rome, I will hang the Pope!'

They crossed the Alps by a dangerous unguarded pass, descended into the plains of Lombardy, and then joined the Spanish army under the Duke of Bourbon. This was in January 1527. A few weeks more, and the combined army, 20,000 strong, was marching on Rome. Then came delays, rumours of a truce, and the mutiny of the Spanish soldiers for their long-withheld pay. Lastly, the German soldiers also mutinied, in vexation at which the old veteran general Frundsberg fell powerless under a shock of paralysis. The army advanced under Bourbon, and then followed the commencement of the siege of Rome; the death of Bourbon, shot as he was mounting a ladder; and—the rest shall be told in the graphic words, which the brother of the Emperor's secretary Valdez put into the mouth of an eye-witness in his 'Dialogue on the Sack of Rome.'

The sack of Rome.

'The Emperor's army was so desirous to enter Rome, some to rob and spoil, others for the extreme hatred they bore to the Court of Rome, and some both for the one and the other cause, that the Spaniards and the Italians on the one side by scale, and the Germans on the other side by pickaxes breaking down the wall, entered by the Borgo, on which side stands the Church of St. Peter and the Holy Palace. Though those within had artillery and those without none, yet they entered without the slaughter of a hundred of themselves. Of those within were slain, some say 6,000, but in truth there died not upon the entry above 4,000, for they immediately retired into the city. The Pope in his own palace was so careless that it was a wonder he was not taken, but seeing how matters stood, he retired himself into the castle of St. Angelo, with thirteen cardinals and other bishops and principal persons who stayed with him. And presently the enemies entered, and spoiled and sacked all that was in the palace, and the like did they to the cardinals' houses and all other houses within the Borgo, not sparing any, no not the Church of the Prince of the Apostles! This day they had enough to do without entering Rome, whither our people, hoisting up the drawbridge, had retired and fortified themselves. The poor Roman people, seeing their manifest destruction, would have sent ambassadors to the army of the Emperor to have agreed with him, and to have avoided the sack; but the Pope would by no means consent to it.

'The captains of the Emperor presently determined to assault the city, and the very same night, fighting with their enemies, they entered, and the sack continued more than eight days, in which time they had no regard of nation, quality, or kind of men. The captains did what they could to stop it, but the soldiers, being so fleshed in their robberies as they were, you should behold troops of soldiers passing the streets with cries; one carried prisoners, another plate, another household stuff. The sighs, groans, and outcries of women and children in all places were so piteous that my bones yet shake to make report of them. They carried no respect to bishops or cardinals, churches or monasteries; all was fish that came into their net; there was never seen more cruelty, less humanity, nor fear of God.

'They had no respect even to Spaniards and Germans, and other nations that were vassals and servants to the Emperor. They left neither house, nor church, nor man that was in Rome unsacked or ransomed, not even the secretary Perez himself, who was resident at Rome on behalf of the Emperor. Those cardinals who could not escape with the Pope into the castle of St. Angelo were taken and ransomed, and their persons full ill-favouredly handled, being drawn through the streets of Rome bare-legged. To make mocking of them, a German, clothing himself like a cardinal, went riding about Rome in his "pontificalibus," and a bottle of wine on the pommel of his saddle, and then a Spaniard in the same manner, with a courtezan behind him. The Germans led a bishop of their own nation (who stood upon election to have been a cardinal) to the market-place to be sold, with a bough in his forehead, as they do when they sell beasts.

'It is said that the sack of Rome amounted unto, by ransoms and compositions, above 15 millions of ducats. Churches were turned into stables. The Church of St. Peter, both on the one side and the other, was all full of horses! Soldiers carried along the streets nuns from monasteries and virgins from their fathers' houses, and from the time that the Emperor's army entered Rome till the time that I departed—the 12th June—there was not a mass said in Rome, nor all that time heard we a bell ring nor a clock. Not a priest or friar dared walk in the streets except in garments of a soldier, else the Germans would cry out, "A pope! a pope! kill! kill!'"

This was what had come to the Pope from the conspiracy of his predecessor with the Emperor at Worms,—an imperial edict at the Diet of Spires, in 1526, leaving the states of Germany virtually free to adhere to or sever themselves from the ecclesiastical empire of Rome as they severally pleased;—Rome sacked by a German army in the Emperor's name, and more pitilessly pillaged than it had been 1000 years before by the Vandals;—the Pope a prisoner of the Emperor in the castle of St. Angelo, and henceforth destined to act as the tool of his imperial master, and to yield an enforced submission to the supremacy of Spain!

Result of the Papal policy.

We may take this result as marking an epoch. Rome had for ever ceased to be the capital of Christendom. The old Roman form of civilization radiating from Rome had finally given place to a new form of civilization, which would go on its way independently of Rome, and which Rome was no longer able either to inspire or to control.

PART III.

RESULTS OF THE PROTESTANT REVOLUTION.

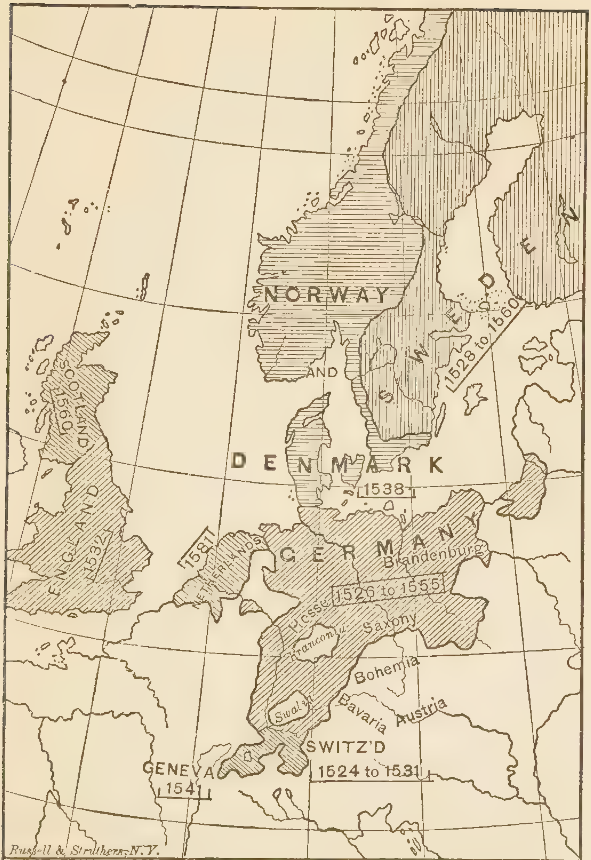
CHAPTER I.

REVOLTS FROM ROME.

In Switzerland and Germany.

(*a*) *Meaning of Revolt from Rome.*

We have now to trace how the Protestant Revolution resulted in several national revolts from the ecclesiastical empire of Rome.


NORWAY
AND
DENMARK
1538
SWEDEN
1528 to 1560
SCOTLAND
1560
ENGLAND
1532
1581
NETHERLANDS
GERMANY
Brandenburg
1526 to 1555
Hesse
Saxony
Franconia
Bohemia
Swabia
Bavaria
Austria
SWITZ'D
1524 to 1531
GENEVA
1541
Russell & Struthers, N.Y.

EXTENT OF THE REVOLT FROM ROME

But first, what did a national revolt from Rome mean? It was the claiming by the civil power in each nation of those rights which the Pope had hitherto claimed within it as head of the great ecclesiastical empire. The clergy and monks had hitherto been regarded more or less as foreigners—*i. e.* as subjects of the Pope's ecclesiastical empire. Where there was revolt from Rome the allegiance of these persons to the Pope was annulled, and the civil power claimed as full a sovereignty over them as it had over its lay subjects. Matters relating to marriages and wills still for the most part remained under ecclesiastical jurisdiction as before, but then, as the ecclesiastical courts themselves became national courts and ceased to be Roman or Papal, all these matters came under the control of the civil power. Even in matters of religious doctrine and practice and public worship, the civil power often claimed the final authority hitherto exercised by the Pope.

Meaning of revolt from Rome.

Such being the meaning of revolt from Rome, it will be clear at once that it was a *political* quite as much as and sometimes more than a *religious* matter—an assertion by the civil power in each nation of that free independent national life which we noticed as characteristic of the new order of things.

A political change.

A study of the map showing 'the extent of the revolt from Rome' will illustrate this by another fact—viz. that it was those nations which in the main are of Teutonic or German origin—Germany, Switzerland, Denmark, Sweden, England, Scotland, and the Netherlands—which finally made good their revolt from Rome. As the Germans under their great leader 'Hermann' had, 1500 years before, been the first to make good their indepen-

The Teutonic nations revolted.
The Romanic nations remained under Rome.

dence from the old Roman Empire, so it was in the nations which were of Germanic speech and origin that revolt was made from papal Rome. On the other hand those nations—Spain, France, and Italy—which had long formed a part of the old Roman Empire, and were *Romanic* in their languages and instincts, remained in allegiance to the Pope.

There were no doubt many people in Spain, France, and Italy who sympathized with the doctrines of the Reformers, but there was no revolt, because these nations, or the civil powers representing them, chose to remain politically connected with Rome.

It is well to observe also how the turn the revolt took in the revolting nations was in a great degree the result of their political condition.

In some nations there was a national revolt. In some divided action and civil wars.

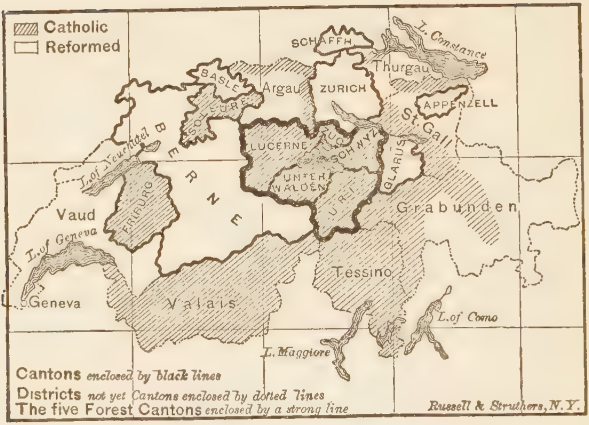
Thus in England, Denmark, Sweden, in which the central power was strong enough to act for the nation and to carry the nation with it, there was a decisive national revolt from Rome; while in Switzerland and Germany, where practically there was no central power capable of acting for the nation as a whole, there were divisions and civil wars within the nation, some of its petty states at length revolting from Rome, and others remaining under the ecclesiastical empire.

We will first take the case of these divided nations—Switzerland and Germany, and then pass on to the others.

(*b*) *The Revolt in Switzerland.*

Switzerland divided into Cantons.

No nation was so absolutely without a central authority as the Swiss. Each canton was as independent of the others for most purposes as the petty feudal states of Germany. When Machiavelli complained of the divisions of Italy


▨ Catholic
☐ Reformed
SCHAFFH
L. Constance
Thurgau
BASLE
Argau
ZURICH
APPENZELL
SOLEURE
St. Gall
L. of Neuchâtel
BERNE
LUCERNE
ZUG
SCHWYZ
GLARUS
UNTERWALDEN
URI
FRIBURG
Vaud
Grabunden
L. of Geneva
Tessino
Geneva
Valais
L. of Como
L. Maggiore
Cantons enclosed by black lines
Districts not yet Cantons enclosed by dotted lines
The five Forest Cantons enclosed by a strong line
Russell & Struthers, N.Y.

preventing its becoming a nation, he warned the Italians of the danger of a country being 'cantonized' like Switzerland. But there was this difference between a Swiss canton and a petty feudal state. In the Swiss canton there was no feudal lord; the people governed themselves. It was not a feudal lordship, but a little republic of communes or villages of the primitive Teutonic type, in which the civil power was vested in the community.

Civil power vested in the people.

If therefore in a Swiss canton the civil power took to itself the ecclesiastical power hitherto held by the Pope, that power became vested in the *people*, not, as in other countries, in the *prince* or king.

Bearing this in mind, the history of the revolt from Rome in Switzerland will be easily comprehended.

Ulrich Zwingle, the Swiss reformer.

The Swiss reformer, *Ulrich Zwingle*, was born in 1484, and was the son of the chief man of his village. Well educated at Basle and Berne, and after having taken this degree at the university at Vienna, he became a curate in Canton *Glarus*. The new learning had spread into Switzerland, and Zwingle was one of its disciples. He studied Plato and the new Testament in Greek, like Colet and Erasmus. Being sent into Italy twice as army preacher, he saw the Swiss troops conquered at Marignano, and returned home full of patriotic hatred of the system of hiring out troops to fight other nations' battles. Then he settled in Zurich and became a reformer; preaching against indulgences, celibacy in the clergy, and whatever else he thought could not be justified by the New Testament.

Settles at Zurich.

His own canton, Zurich, under his influence, threw off the episcopal yoke of the Bishop of Constance and assumed the ecclesiastical authority to itself. The Zurich government authorized the use of their mother tongue instead of Latin in public worship, burned the relics from the shrines and altered the mode of admistering the sacraments. So Zurich revolted from Rome in 1524. Berne followed soon after; while the *Forest Cantons*—Lucerne, Zug, Schwitz, Uri, and Unterwalden—followed by Fribourg and the Valais, which was not yet a Swiss canton, held to the old order of things.

Zurich assumes to itself ecclesiastical powers.

Berne did the same soon after.

Some cantons going one way and some another, the result was division and civil war, the Catholic cantons calling in the aid of their old feudal enemies, the House of Hapsburg. The civil war lasted, off and on, for two or three years till, in 1531, after Zwingle himself had fallen in battle, it was ended by the peace of Cappel, at which it was decided that each canton should do as it

Civil war.

Peace of Cappel, 1531.

liked, while in the districts which were dependent on the Swiss Confederation, and not to any particular canton, the majority in each congregation should manage its own ecclesiastical affairs. The map will show which cantons revolted from Rome, and how the districts were divided in their action.

Character of Zwingle.

Zwingle was a true patriot. He wished to see the Swiss a united nation; and with that object he proposed political as well as religious reforms which are now being carried out. He was rather a disciple of Erasmus than of Luther. He did not adopt the strong Augustinian views of Luther. He also took freer views respecting the sacraments. Luther, a slave in this respect to the mere letter of Scripture, held by the words 'This is my body' so strongly as to uphold the doctrine of 'the real presence' almost as fully as the Catholic party. Zwingle took wider views, treating the sacrament as a symbol The violent dogmatic intolerant spirit of Luther was never more painfully shown than in the dispute with Zwingle on this subject. The bitter hatred he showed to Zwingle and Erasmus was all of a piece with his violent feelings against the poor peasants of Germany. Whilst doing justice to the noble and heroic character of the great German reformer, these things remind us that there lingered in his mind much of the dogmatism and intolerance of the scholastic theologian.

Luther quarrels with Zwingle.

(*c*) *The Revolt in Germany* (1526–1555).

We have seen how the German people suffered at the commencement of the era because they had not yet become a united nation; and also how deep and widely spread were their yearnings after national life and unity —peasants crying out to the higher powers for protection from feudal oppression—Luther and Hutten appealing to them to free the German nation from the tyranny of the great ecclesiastical empire of Rome. Had Charles V. cared more for Germany than his own selfish ambitions, and put himself at the head of the strong national feeling, as Frederick of Saxony wanted him to do at Worms, there was at least a good chance of uniting Germany into a powerful and prosperous nation. But he threw away the chance. We have seen how the course taken by Charles V. and the higher powers in the Diet of Worms produced a revolution which cost a hundred thousand lives. We have now to see how it divided Germany into two hostile camps, hurried her into the horrors of the Thirty Years' War, postponed for eight or ten generations the freedom of her peasantry, and left to our own times the realization of the yearnings of the German people after national unity.

The freedom of the German peasantry postponed for ten generations.

The Diet of Spires, 1526, left each state to take its own course about Luther.

The decision of the Diet of Spires in 1526 had already settled that each state of the Empire should do as it thought best in the matter of the edict against Luther.

Hence arose Protestant states, with national churches free from Rome, while others remained Catholic.

As might be expected, those princes who sided with Luther, and followed the lead of Saxony, at once took reform into their own hands. Monasteries were reformed or suppressed, and their revenues turned to good account, either for educational purposes, for supporting the preaching of the gospel, or for the poor. Monks and nuns were allowed to marry, Luther himself setting the example of marrying a nun. Divine service was in part carried on in German, though Latin was not entirely excluded. The youth were taught to read in common schools and in the language of the Fatherland. Luther's German Bible and German hymns came into popular use. In a word, in what were called the 'Evangelical States' a severance was made from the Church of Rome; and national churches sprang up, resting on the civil power of each state for their authority and adopting Lutheran doctrines. This was the result of the decree of the first Diet of Spires and the Emperor's quarrel with the Pope.

The second Diet of Spires, 1529, reversed the decision, notwithstanding the protest of the *Protestant* princes.

Meanwhile the Emperor, having settled his quarrel with the Pope, returned to his loyalty to Rome, and, taking advantage of this, the Catholic party succeeded, in the second Diet of Spires, in 1529, in passing a decree re-enacting the Edict of Worms, and forbidding all future reform till a regular council was summoned. The Lutheran princes protested against the decree, and so earned the name of 'Protestants.'

Civil war averted by the Turks' attack on Vienna.

Civil war would very likely have at once resulted from this had not the Turks very opportunely made an attempt to extend their empire westward by besieging Vienna. The old dread which filled the minds of Christians at the beginning of the era came upon them again. Melanchthon, who, with all his wisdom, still believed in astrology, watched the movements of the stars, and augured disastrous results from the approach of a comet. Luther showed how thorough a German he was by counselling unity in the moment of common danger. For a time Germany was united again, but only till the Turks had retreated from Vienna.

Charles V. had now reached the summit of his power. He had conquered France, he had conquered the Pope, The Turks driven back. Charles V. turns again upon German heretics.

he had been crowned king of Italy at Bologna. He was now again reconciled with the Pope, and lastly, he had driven back the Turks. He had only to conquer the heretics of Germany to complete the list of his triumphs. So he came in person to the Diet of Augsburg in 1530 to ensure by his presence the enforcement of the Edict of Worms. Every effort was made to induce the Protestant princes to submit; but, headed by John of Saxony and Philip of Hesse, they maintained their ground. Luther and Melanchthon were at Coburg, near at hand, and drew up a statement of Lutheran doctrines which was known henceforth as the 'Augsburg Confession.'

Diet of Augsburg. The 'Augsburg Confession.'

The Emperor at length gave them a few months to consider whether they would submit; if not, the decree of the Diet was, that the Lutheran heresy should be crushed by the imperial power. The Protestant princes at once formed the 'league of Schmalkalden' for mutual defence. And this, in spite of Luther's protest against opposition to the civil power, would have at once led to civil war, had not another Turkish invasion in 1532 again diverted the attention of Charles V. and of Germany from religious disputes.

Protestant princes form the league of Schmalkald for mutual defence.

During the life of Luther, the inevitable civil war was postponed. Melanchthon used the delay for an attempt, by argument and persuasion, to bring about a reconciliation between Catholic and Protestant theologians. At the council of Ratisbon, as we shall see by-and-by, a theological peace was almost concluded; but the schism was too wide and deep to be healed so easily. Meanwhile, state

Civil war postponed during Luther's life, after state went over to the Protestant side, and civil war became more and more imminent. The death of Luther in 1546 was the signal for its commencement. The Emperor and Catholic princes, by means of Spanish soldiers, now tried to reduce to obedience the princes of the Schmalkald league. They conquered the Elector John Frederic of Saxony and Duke Philip of Hesse, the leaders of the Lutheran party, and proceeded to enforce by the sword a return to Catholic faith and practice all over Germany.

but it begins soon after his death.

Charles V. now appeared in his true light as the Spanish conqueror of Germany. John Frederick of Saxony and Philip of Hesse, the most beloved and truly German of German princes, were sentenced to death, kept in prison, and brutally treated. Germany, which Charles V. had sacrificed at the Diet of Worms to secure his Spanish policy, was now kept down by Spanish soldiers, and practically made into a Spanish province.

Spanish conquest of Germany.

This was not the national unity which the German people yearned after; it was subjugation to a foreign yoke.

A few years of Spanish rule produced its natural effect—revolt of the German princes, alliance even with France! and then came, with strange suddenness, the defeat and flight of Charles V. He made an attempt to regain part of the ground which the French had taken, and then abdicated, leaving the empire to his brother Ferdinand, Spain and the Netherlands to his son Philip II. Then followed his cloister life, his strange remorse in consideration that he had not averted all these evils by the timely destruction of the heretic Luther at the Diet of Worms; and then at last the end of his strange, brilliant, but misguided life in 1558.

Revolt of the Protestant princes. Defeat of Charles V.; his abdication and death.

The Peace of Augsburg (1555), and its rule of mock toleration.

The struggle of Charles V. with Germany ended in the *Peace of Augsburg* (1555), with its legal recognition of the Protestant states and its wretched rule of mock toleration—*cujus regio, ejus religio*—toleration to princes, with power to compel their subjects to be of the same religion as themselves! It was a peace so rotten in its foundation that out of it came by inevitable necessity that most terrible chapter of German history, and perhaps of any history—*the Thirty Years' War*—which cost Germany, some say, half her population, robbed her citizens of the last vestige of their political freedom, confirmed the serfdom of her peasantry for two centuries more, and left upon some of her provinces scars which may be traced to-day.

Evils brought upon Germany by Charles V.

Such terrible paths had the German people to tread towards national freedom and unity. Ten generations of Germans had to bear the curse brought upon them, not by the Reformation, but by those who opposed it—not by Luther, nor even by Münzer and his wild associates, but by the Emperor Charles V. and others of the higher powers who sided with him when he sold the interests of Germany and signed the treaty with the Pope on that fatal 8th of May, 1521, at the Diet of Worms.

CHAPTER II.

REVOLT OF ENGLAND FROM ROME.

(*a*) *Its Political Character.*

THERE were two points in which the revolt of England from Rome differed from the revolt in Switzerland and Germany.

(1) England was a compact nation with a strong central government; and so, instead of splitting into parties and ending in civil war, revolted altogether, the king and parliament acting together, and transferring to the crown the ecclesiastical jurisdiction hitherto exercised by the Pope in England.

In England the revolt from Rome was national,

(2) In the Protestant states of Germany and cantons of Switzerland, a religious movement had preceded and caused a political change; but in England the political change came first and the change in doctrine and mode of worship long afterwards. The severance of England from Rome was not the result of a religious movement, but of political causes, which we must now trace.

and came at first from political causes.

(*b*) *Reasons for Henry VIII.'s Loyalty to Rome.*

Up to a certain point in his reign Henry VIII. held by the Pope and opposed Luther. At the time of the Diet of Worms he joined the league of the Pope and Emperor, not only against France, but also against Luther. Whilst the Diet of Worms was sitting, he wrote his celebrated book against Luther and in defence of the divine authority of the Pope—for doing which the Pope rewarded him with the title of "Defender of the Faith."

Henry VIII. defends the divine authority of the Pope, and writes a book against Luther in 1521.

His zeal in this matter was so eager as to surprise Sir Thomas More, who was now in Henry VIII.'s service. When the king showed him the book, and he saw the passages in defence of the divine authority of the Pope, More (who himself doubted it, and had hinted his doubts in his Utopia by making the Utopians talk of electing a Pope of their own) questioned with the king whether it

He tells Sir Thomas More of a secret reason for it.

was wise to write so strongly on that point. "Whereunto (More says) his Highness answered me that he would in no wise anything minish of that matter; of which thing his Highness showed me a secret cause whereof I never had anything heard before."

Thereupon More studied the matter afresh, altered his opinion, came to the conclusion that the Papacy was of divine authority, and held that view so strongly ever after, that at last he died rather than deny it. The reasons which made Henry VIII. uphold the divine authority of the Pope, are the clue to the history of the severance of England from Rome afterwards.

What were they?

Henry VIII.'s marriage with Catherine of Arragon.

We saw how the ruling idea of Henry VII. was to establish himself and his heirs firmly on the throne. Kings had hitherto had such precarious thrones that they lived in constant fear of rebellions and pretenders. We saw how Henry VII. relied greatly on his foreign policy and alliances to make his throne secure, and that the chief way of making these alliances firm, in an age of bad faith and Machiavellian policy, was by royal marriages. Henry VII. knew Ferdinand of Spain would tell lies or break his oath without remorse, but he also knew that if he could marry his son and probable successor to Ferdinand's daughter, Ferdinand would stick by him in close alliance in order to secure that his daughter might some day be queen of England. So Henry VII. had married his eldest son Arthur, Prince of Wales, to Catherine of Arragon, and when Arthur died, had strained a point to get Catherine betrothed to his next son, Henry VIII.

Now there was a difficulty about this marriage. If the marriage with Arthur was merely a formal marriage, then it was only an ecclesiastical matter, and the Pope's consent to Catherine's marriage with Henry might make all right. But if it was a real marriage, then the second marriage with Henry would be clearly contrary to the divine law, as contained in the Book of Leviticus, where marriage with a brother's wife was forbidden: and so, in that case, the question would be whether the Pope could set aside the divine law, and make lawful what it forbad. To do this must certainly be a great stretch of the papal power, and it only could be justified on the very high ground of the divine authority of the Pope.

Secret doubts about its validity.

The betrothal of Henry to Catherine was from the beginning a miserable affair. Its object was political. It was his father Henry VII.'s doing while he was a boy; and so doubtful, to say the least, was its validity to those who knew all about it, that to Henry VII.'s superstitious mind the death of his queen seemed a divine judgment upon it. He even then, as we have seen, proposed to marry Catherine himself, but Ferdinand of Spain would not hear of it. A bull was obtained from Pope Julius II., treating the question of the reality of the former marriage as *doubtful*, but, notwithstanding the doubts, sanctioning Catherine's marriage with Henry. The betrothal was completed, but the wary monarch made his son sign a secret protest against it as soon as he was of age, so that he might at any time set it aside if the turn of political events made it expedient to do so. We must remember, however, that some of these matters were court secrets, and would never have been publicly known had not future events brought them to light.

Its unsatisfactory beginning.

Upon the accession of Henry VIII. it was needful for him to make up his mind about his marriage. The doubts and difficulties remained the same as ever to those who knew all about it, and it was not possible to dispel them. But the alliance with Spain was still considered important. And so the marriage with Catherine was concluded. The public were told that the former marriage had never been consummated, and that Henry VIII. was acting under the sanction of a Papal bull. This silenced talk out of doors, and the king smothered any secret doubts of his own, relying on the divine authority of the Pope. So the matter was concluded, and now for years had not been questioned again. When, therefore, Luther's attack upon the divine authority of the Pope was attracting attention everywhere, we see that Henry VIII. had serious reasons of his own for defending it. He knew in fact that the validity of his marriage, and the legitimacy of his children's rights to succeed to the throne, depended upon it.

Its validity rested on the Divine authority of the Pope.

Henry VIII.'s anxiety about it, and the succession.

And anxiety to keep on good terms with the Pope and Charles V.

He had naturally been very anxious for an heir, so that his throne might be secure. Unless he had an heir, people must be thinking who will be king next, and plotting to succeed to the throne. Henry and Catherine had had several children, but all had died except one—the Princess Mary—who, at the time of the Diet of Worms, was a child of four years old. On her alone the succession depended, and Henry was anxious to secure it, as we have seen, by a close alliance with the Pope and Spain, cemented by the marriage of the Princess Mary to Charles V. Henry VIII. knew that the succession to the throne might at any time be made very precarious indeed if he should ever quarrel with the Papal and Spanish Courts.

An event which happened about this time showed how keenly alive Henry VIII. was to these anxieties about the successsion of the Princess Mary. He startled the world all at once by the execution of the Duke of Buckingham for treason; for having his eye on the succession to the throne. The Duke, it was said, amongst other things, had been heard to speak of the death of the royal children as judgments on Henry and Catherine for their marriage. This was enough to rouse Henry's suspicions, and so, after a formal trial, he was found guilty of treason and beheaded as a warning to others.

Execution of the Duke of Buckingham for having his eye upon the succession to the throne.

(*c*) *Sir Thomas More defends Henry VIII. against Luther.*

Probably the secret which Henry VIII. confided to Sir Thomas More had something to do with the doubts about the validity of the marriage, and opened his eyes to the fact how the succession to the throne and the safety of the kingdom was involved in the divine authority of the Pope. It set him, as we have said, studying the fathers until he came to the conclusion that an authority which had long been recognized, and on which so much depended, must have divine sanction. Having come to this conclusion, he was not likely to be made more favourable to Luther than he otherwise would have been. We have seen that the Oxford Reformers had from the first taken high ground on the necessity of unity in the Christian Church. They had also always been opposed to the Augustinian views which Luther had adopted. They had agreed with Luther in little but in the demand for a religious and ecclesiastical reform.

Effect of knowledge of Henry VIII.'s secret on Sir Thomas More's mind.

Erasmus had refused to identify himself with Luther, and while defending him up to a certain point against the Papal party had urged upon him moderation. This advice Luther had not followed, and now Erasmus held aloof from the Protestant struggle, urging moderation on both sides, preaching unity, and going on quietly with his own works, amongst which were fresh editions of his New Testament.

It is not surprising, then, that when Luther wrote his violent reply to Henry VIII.'s book, More should be ready to defend it. He did so, and as time went on his zeal against Luther grew by degrees almost into hatred. As news of the wild doings of the prophets of Zwickau and the horrors of the Peasants' War were reported in England, More laid the blame on Luther. He regarded him as a dangerous fanatic, scattering everywhere the seeds of rebellion against the powers that be, whether civil or religious.

Reaction in the minds of Erasmus and More against Luther.

He also urged his friend Erasmus to write against Luther. In 1524, on the eve of the Peasants' War, Erasmus did write a book against Luther's strong Augustinian views, in which he urged that they were sure to lead to all sorts of abuses in wilder hands. In the year of the Peasants' War Sir Thomas More wrote an earnest letter to one of Luther's supporters in Wittenberg, charging the Lutheran movement with having lit the flame of sedition and set Germany on fire.

It is sad to see good and noble men like More hurried into reaction, and unable to see the good and noble points in a man like Luther, as well as his violence and errors. But it was not unnatural. He dreaded lest the heresies which had led in Germany to the Peasants' War, might spread into England, and lest heresy and treason should again be joined as in the days of the Lollards. His judgment was no doubt to some extent carried away by his fears. But we must recognize the sincerity and mental reactions such as these in the lives of good men. Each class of Reformers we have seen to be suspicious of those who went further and faster than they did themselves. Honest men of the old school blamed Erasmus for all that happened. Erasmus, they said, had laid the egg, and Luther had hatched it. Erasmus, in his turn, blamed Luther's violent conduct and language. Luther again denounced Münzer and the wild prophets of revolution, as well as the poor deluded peasants. If this was natural, so was the reaction in the mind of Sir Thomas More. We need not, however, regret it any the less on that account.

(*d*) *Reasons for Henry VIII.'s change of Policy.*

Having thus seen that Henry VIII. from policy, and More from conviction, were at this time strongly in favour of the Pope and his divine authority, the next thing is to mark how long Henry VIII. continued of this mind. The answer is, *just so long as his alliance with Spain continued.*

Wolsey, the great war minister of Henry VIII.

During the wars of the Emperor, the Pope, and Henry VIII. with France, Wolsey (now cardinal and legate, and Archbishop of York, and soon after lord chancellor also) was the war minister. It was he who knew all the mind of Henry VIII. and carried on his secret negotiations with Charles V. and the Pope. It was he who managed the treachery with Francis I., and made what preparation was needful for royal meetings, embassies, and wars. It was Wolsey, too, who had to manage parliaments, and urge them to grant subsidies to pay for the wars, and when he could get no more money from Parliament it was Wolsey who managed to get it by legal means, such as forced contributions from private persons called 'benevolences.'

More opposed to the wars with France.

More was a novice on the privy council, and holding Utopian views, often in a minority against Wolsey's measures. Once he was alone in disapproval of the great minister's plans. Wolsey hinted that he must be a fool. 'God be thanked,' replied More, 'that the king has but one fool in his council!'

It mattered little to the king or Wolsey what he thought, but More took care to let the king know that England's joining in the wars with France was against his judgment.

Charles V.'s treachery,

And the Pope's.

Wolsey's and Henry's confidence in Charles V. was shattered by degrees. First came the treachery of Charles V. in not helping to secure the election of Wolsey as Pope on the death of Leo X. and afterwards of Adrian VI. Then came the continuance of the war against France, under the Duke of Bourbon, who flattered Henry with hopes of regaining in case of victory the lost English provinces in France. Next came Pope Clement VII.'s fast and loose game with the allied sovereigns; and lastly, the battle of Pavia. Of these events we have spoken in a previous chapter.

On hearing the news of the capture of Francis I. at the battle of Pavia, Henry VIII. proposed that he himself should be king of France and Charles V. marry the Princess Mary, so that in her right Charles V. might some day become lord of all Christendom. Up to this moment he had clearly not changed his mind. He still wished to continue the Spanish alliance, and was true to

Catherine and the Princess Mary. But just as his hopes were at their highest point they vanished for ever. Charles V. let Francis I. resume his throne on conditions which the Pope declared to be null and void. Charles V., instead of marrying the Princess Mary, married the Infanta of Portugal, and Henry found himself betrayed. Charles V. and the Pope, on whose alliance so much depended, had now both escaped from his control. When, by the conquest of Rome, the Pope himself soon after became Charles V.'s prisoner and tool, Henry VIII.'s foreign politics were indeed all at sea.

Henry VIII.'s foreign policy all at sea again.

(*e*) *The Crisis—Henry VIII. determines upon the Divorce from Catherine of Arragon.*

Now look at Henry VIII.'s position. Mary was still his only child. There had never yet been a queen on the throne of England. He could no longer rely on Charles V. and the Pope. They at any time, and for political purposes, and in spite of Henry, could dispute the legitimacy of his only daughter. Once more the succession to the throne was uncertain, and in its nature the uncertainty could not be cured. What was he to do?

Results of breach with Spain.

He resolved to take the bull by the horns, to divorce himself from Catherine of Arragon, to disinherit Mary, to marry a young maid of honour, named Anne Boleyn, and to hope for other heirs to the crown. It was a bold policy, for marriage was a matter which belonged to the ecclesiastical empire, and so the divorce required the Pope's consent. Wolsey set his wits to work to secure the Pope's sanction to the divorce. He got his own ecclesiastical power as legate increased by the Pope, and Cardinal Campeg-

Political reasons for the divorce from Catherine.

gio over from Rome to join him in deciding on the validity of the marriage. He tried every means to secure the divorce required by Henry. He had no notion of destroying in Henry's mind the papal authority which as legate he wielded in part, and as pope still hoped some day to wield entirely. Had he succeeded in obtaining the papal sanction, there would have been no breach with Rome. But he failed. The Pope, at the bidding of his Spanish conqueror, made endless delays; and Campeggio returned without having settled anything. At last, in spite of all that Wolsey could do, Henry VIII. determined to marry Anne Boleyn, and took the matter into his own hands.

Wolsey tries to get the Pope to grant a divorce, but fails.

Henry VIII. takes the matter into his own hands.

This involved a deliberate breach with Rome and the fall of Wolsey. Henry VIII. made up his mind to face both.

(*f*) *Fall of Wolsey* (*1529–1530*).

Fall of Wolsey.

Cardinal Wolsey had been the very type of an overgrown ecclesiastical potentate. Second to none but the king, he had assumed to himself a viceregal magnificence and state. And now that ecclesiastical grievances had come to the top, and, above all, the king himself was quarelling with the Pope, Wolsey became a sort of scapegoat for both ecclesiastical and papal sins. He was condemned formally for having used his legatine and ecclesiastical authority contrary to the royal prerogative. But the king had so far connived at and sanctioned the very things for which he was now condemned, and used them for his own purposes, that he could hardly deal very harshly with his old minister. He left him his archbishopric of York, to which he returned in 1530. There he resumed some of his old state, but by his intrigues to obtain popularity amongst the

Northern nobles again excited the fears of the court. Messengers were sent down to arrest him of high treason, and he was on his journey to London to answer the charge, when, seized by a fever, he died at Leicester Abbey, having given utterance to the famous words, 'Had I served my God as I have served my king, he would not have given me over in my gray hairs!' Henry VIII. was not conspicuous for gratitude to his ministers.

(*g*) *The Parliament of* 1529–1536. *Revolt of England from Rome.*

Sir Thomas More lord chancellor.

Wolsey was dismissed in 1529. Hitherto the chief ministers and lord chancellors of kings of England had been ecclesiastics. This rule was now broken through. The Dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk were made chief ministers and Sir Thomas More lord chancellor. Lastly, a parliament was called.

Parliament of 1529. A crisis in English history like the Diet of Worms in German history.

A crisis had come in English history. The parliament of 1529 was to England what the Diet of Worms might have been to Germany. The English Commons made use of this parliament, as the Germans did of the Diet of Worms, to make complaints against the clergy and the ecclesiastical courts. For a long time the people of England, like the Germans, had resisted the power of the ecclesiastical empire. The freedom of the clergy from the jurisdiction of the secular courts on the one hand, the jurisdiction of the ecclesiastical courts on the other hand over laymen in such matters as marriages, probates of wills, and the distribution of property amongst the next of kin on the death of the owner, were real and long-standing grievances. The clergy, by their

Complaints against the clergy and ecclesiastical abuses.

ecclesiastical courts, harassed and taxed the people beyond endurance. The character of the clergy and monks was also grievously complained of. Wolsey had sought, as Cardinal Morton had done before him, to reform these abuses. Himself a cardinal and legate, he had sought powers from the Pope to repress the evils; to visit and even suppress some of the worst of the monasteries and correct the clergy; and his scheme, partly carried out, was to found colleges at the universities out of the proceeds. This was all very well as far as it went, but it never went far enough to be of much use, and now the time of reformation under papal authority was passed. Both king and parliament were in a mind to undertake themselves the needed ecclesiastical reforms.

Wolsey's attempts at ecclesiastical reform under papal authority.

The king and parliament now take up the matter.

A petition, describing at length the ecclesiastical grievances, was laid by the Commons before the king. The king submitted it to the bishops, at the same time requiring henceforth that no new law should be passed by the clergy in convocation, any more than in parliament, without his royal consent. The bishops tried to explain away the complaints, but before parliament was prorogued acts were passed fixing at reasonable sums the amounts to be demanded for probate of wills and funeral fees, prohibiting the clergy from engaging in secular business, or holding too many benefices, and obliging them to reside in their parishes.

Petition of the Commons against ecclesiastical grievances.

These were matters of practical reform, such as Colet had urged in his sermon to convocation in 1511. He had urged that the clergy in convocation should take up these reforms, and reform *themselves*. They had let eighteen years slip by without

Practical reforms.

doing it, and now the bolder power of Parliament was over-ruling their feeble opposition.

The divorce question laid before the Universities by Cranmer.

Meanwhile the divorce question went into another phase. Cranmer now came on to the scene. He was soon to be the chief ecclesiastical adviser of Henry VIII. He consulted the chief universities of Europe on the power of Pope Julius to dispense with the divine law, and so upon the validity of the marriage with Catherine. The Universities gave their opinions very much according to the influence brought upon them. The English and French were most in favour of Henry VIII.'s views. The opinions were laid before parliament in 1531, but nothing further was done that year.

Further reforms.

In its next two sessions this celebrated parliament proceeded step by step with ecclesiastical reforms. The greatest of all legislative scandals, benefit of clergy, was curtailed. Payment of annates to Rome was forbidden. Appeals to Rome were abolished. Heretics were still to be burned, but speaking against the Pope was declared no longer to be heresy. The king's assent was made necessary to ecclesiastical ordinances. The Pope's jurisdiction in England was abolished and transferred to the king. Lastly he assumed the title of supreme head of the Church of England, which was finally confirmed by Parliament in 1534.

The king declared supreme head of the Church of England instead of the Pope.

The king marries Anne Boleyn. The revolt of England from Rome is now completed.

The king meanwhile determined to deal with his own marriage. In defiance of the Pope, he married Anne Boleyn in January 1532–3. The marriage with Catherine was declared null and void by Cranmer, now Archbishop of Canterbury, and by act of parliament. Thus the breach with Rome was complete. England had, in fact, revolted from the ecclesiastical empire, by the joint action of king and parliament, and with the assent, however reluctant, even of the clergy.

(*h*) *Heresy still punished in England.*

There had been no change of religious creed.

Heretics still persecuted, and among them *Tindal*, the translator of the New Testament.

Now it will be observed that all this came to pass without any change of religious creed, without England becoming Lutheran or Protestant. All the while heresy was a crime against which king and parliament and clergy were equally severe. The breach with Rome made no difference on this point, except that speaking against the Pope was no longer heresy. There was as stern a determination as ever to prevent the spread of heresy in England. Wolsey's dying advice to Henry VIII. in November 1530 was not to let the new pernicious sect of the Lutherans spread in England. Tindal, the noble single-minded Englishman to whom we owe the first translation of the New Testament into English, was all this while watched and tracked and persecuted from place to place as a dangerous foe. Fired with zeal by reading the New Testament of Erasmus, to give the English people access to its truths in the "vulgar tongue," he pursued his object with a heroism and patriotism which should make his name dear to Englishmen. Strange was it that one of his persecutors was Sir Thomas More, who, in his "Utopia," had expressed views in favour of religious toleration.

Sir Thomas More's zeal against heresy.

It was just after the sack of Rome that More published his opinion that heresy, being dangerous to the state, ought to be punished in England, lest it should lead to similar results to those it had led to on the Continent. It was only a few months after, that when, on the fall of Wolsey in 1529, he was made lord chancellor, he had to swear by his oath of office, amongst other things, to carry out the laws against heresy. He became now, by virtue of his office, the public prosecutor of heretics. The bishops were his most active police, and ever and anon poor men were handed over to him for examination and legal punishment. The times were barbarous. Torture was used in the examination of criminals and of heretics also, and, it can hardly be doubted, even in the presence of Sir Thomas More. Yet, in a certain way, More's gentleness showed itself even in persecution. By the law of the land, heretics must abjure or be burned. More tried hard to save both their bodies and souls. He used every means in his power to induce them to abjure. During the first two years of his chancellorship he staved off the evil day. Every single heretic abjured; no single fire had yet been lit in Smithfield during his rule; but, in the last six months of it, three abjured heretics relapsing into heresy were burned under his authority, the dying martyrs' prayers rising from the stake, "May the Lord forgive Sir Thomas More!" "May the Lord open the eyes of Sir Thomas More!"

Strange was it that during these sad months, while More was persecuting others for conscience' sake, he himself had to choose between his own conscience and death.

(*i*) *Execution of Sir Thomas More* (1535).

We have seen that he had come to the conviction that the Pope was head of the Church by divine authority.

More himself has to suffer for conscience' sake.

He had held his post of Lord Chancellor so long as the action of Parliament involved only the much needed reform of ecclesiastical abuses—till 1532. But so soon as, in

1532, he saw the breach with Rome was inevitable, and that Henry VIII. would delay no longer, he resigned the seals and retired into the bosom of his home at Chelsea —that home which Erasmus had made known all over Europe as a pattern in respect of domestic virtue, culture, and happiness.

More had firmly told the king that he disapproved of the divorce, both before and after he was lord chancellor. He declined to be present at Anne Boleyn's coronation; and when warned and threatened by order of the king, his brave reply was that threats were arguments for *children*, not for *him*. When the oath acknowledging Anne Boleyn as the lawful wife of Henry VIII. was administered to him, he refused to take it Bishop Fisher alone among the whole bench of bishops did the same. More and Fisher were therefore sent to the Tower.'

More and Fisher sent to the Tower.

Himself in prison for conscience' sake, More's thoughts turned to the heretics against whom he had been so zealous; and he left a paper for his friends warning them if ever, by reason of their office, they had to punish others, not to let their zeal outrun their charity. It was, perhaps, a confession that it had been so with him. He pondered also on the divisions in the Church, and expressed his hopes that after all there might be a reconciliation between Catholics and Protestants.

His wife visited him in prison, and reminded him of his home and his peril in not taking the oath. 'Good Mistress Alice,' he replied to her, 'tell me one thing: Is not this house as nigh heaven as mine own?'

His beloved daughter Margaret Roper visited him often, and the story of his love for her and her daughterly affection for him, has become a favourite theme of historians, painters, and poets.

His trial, like that of the Duke of Buckingham, was a typical Tudor trial. It was not a question of guilt or innocence, but of state necessity. Anne Boleyn's star being in the ascendant, Sir Thomas More and Bishop Fisher must die.

This is Mr. Froude's account of More's death:

Execution of Sir Thomas More.

'The four days which remained to him he spent in 'prayer, and in severe bodily discipline. On the night 'of the 5th of July, although he did not 'know the time which had been fixed for 'his execution, yet, with an instinctive feel-'ing that it was near, he sent his daughter Margaret his 'hair-shirt and whip, as having no more need of them, 'with a parting blessing of affection.

'He then lay down and slept quietly. At daybreak 'he was awoke by the entrance of Sir Thomas Pope, who 'had come to confirm his anticipations, and to tell him 'that it was the king's pleasure that he should suffer at '9 o'clock that morning. He received the news with 'utter composure. "I am much bounden to the king," 'he said, "for the benefits and honours he has bestowed '"upon me; and, so help me God, most of all am I '"bounden to him that it pleaseth his Majesty to rid me '"shortly out of the miseries of this present world."

'Pope told him the king desired he would not use 'many words on the scaffold. "Mr. Pope," he answered, '"you do well to give me warning; for, otherwise, I had '"purposed somewhat to have spoken, but no matter '"therewith his grace should have cause to be offended. '"Howbeit, whatever I intended, I shall obey his High-'"ness' command."

'He afterwards discussed the arrangements for his 'funeral, at which he begged that his family might be 'present; and when all was settled, Pope rose to leave 'him. He was an old friend. He took More's hand 'and wrung it, and, quite overcome, burst into tears.

'"Quiet yourself, Mr. Pope," More said, "and be not '"discomfited, for I trust we shall once see each other '"full merrily, when we shall live and love together in '"eternal bliss."

'So about 9 of the clock he was brought by the lieutenant out of the Tower, his beard being long, which 'fashion he had never before used—his face pale and 'lean, carrying in his hands a red cross, casting his eyes 'often toward heaven. He had been unpopular as a 'judge, and one or two persons in the crowd were inso'lent to him; but the distance was short, and soon over, 'as all else was nearly over now.

'The scaffold had been awkwardly erected, and shook 'as he placed his foot upon the ladder. "See me safe '"up," he said to Kingston; "for my coming down I '"can shift for myself." He began to speak to the peo'ple, but the sheriff begged him not to proceed; and 'he contented himself with asking for their prayers, and 'desiring them to bear witness for him that he died in 'the faith of the holy Catholic Church, and a faithful 'servant of God and the king. He then repeated the 'Miserere Psalm on his knees; and when he had ended 'and had arisen, the executioner, with an emotion which 'promised ill for the manner in which his part would be 'accomplished, begged his forgiveness. More kissed 'him. "Thou art to do me the greatest benefit that I '"can receive," he said; "pluck up thy spirit, man, and '"be not afraid to do thine office. My neck is very '"short; take heed, therefore, that thou strike not awry '"for saving of thine honesty." The executioner offered 'to tie his eyes. "I will cover them myself," he said; 'and, binding them in a cloth which he had brought 'with him, he knelt and laid his head upon the block. 'The fatal stroke was about to fall, when he signed for a 'moment's delay, while he moved aside his beard.

'"Pity that should be cut," he murmured, "that has '"not committed treason." With which strange words— 'the strangest, perhaps, ever uttered at such a time—the 'lips famous through Europe for eloquence and wisdom 'closed for ever.'

(*k*) *Death of Erasmus.* (1536).

Erasmus dies soon after.

The news of the Death of Sir Thomas More in 1535 reached Erasmus in old age and suffering from illness, but labouring still with his pen to the last. He was writing a book on the 'Purity of the Church,' and in the preface he described his friend as 'a soul purer than snow.' He lived only a few months longer, died in 1536, and was buried in the cathedral at Basle with every token of respect.

The work of the Oxford Reformers had produced great results.

Not forty years had passed since Erasmus had first met Colet at Oxford, and since the three Oxford students whom for the sake of distinction we have called the Oxford Reformers, joined heart and soul in that fellow-work which had caught its inspiration from Florence. How much had come out of their fellow-work! Colet, the one who brought the inspiration from Florence, had died in 1519, before the crisis came. But even then the work of the Oxford Reformers was already in one sense done. They had sown their seed. The New Testament of Erasmus was already given to the world, and nothing had so paved the way for the Protestant Reformation as that great work had done. Since Colet's death, Erasmus and More had never met. Each had taken his own line. More was driven far further into reaction than Erasmus. After the Peasants' War and the sack of Rome, Erasmus still preached tolerance on the one hand, and satirized the monks and schoolmen on the other hand. And his satire was just as bitter in these later writings as it had been in the 'Praise of Folly.' But he too, like More, held on to their old hatred of schism, preached concord in the Church, and longed for a reconciliation between the contending parties.

(*l*) *Dissolution of the Monasteries, and Reform of the Universities* 1536.

The bitter satire of Erasmus upon the monks bore fruit sooner than he himself expected, and especially in England. The necessity of a thorough reform in the monasteries was now everywhere acknowledged, and there was no longer any reason to wait for bulls from Rome before beginning the work. The king was in a mood to humble the monks. The bishops and secular clergy had bowed their heads to the royal supremacy. The time now for the monks and abbots had come.

The work set a going by the Oxford Reformers goes on.

Within a few months of More's death, a commission was issued by *Thomas Cromwell* (the minister who was now vicegerent of the new royal ecclesiastical authority), for a general visitation of the monasteries.

Cromwell, now ecclesiastical minister of Henry VIII., inquires into the state of the monasteries.

The popular complaints against them were not found to be baseless. Scandal had long been busy about the morals of the monks. The commissioners found them on inquiry worse even than scandal had whispered, and reported to Parliament that two-thirds of the monks were leading vicious lives under cover of their cowls and hoods.

And into shrines and relics.

Erasmus, in his 'Colloquies,' had spread all over Europe his suspicions that the relics by which the monks attracted so many pilgrims, and so much wealth in offerings to their shrines, were false and their miracles pretended. He had visited and described both the two great English shrines of 'St. Thomas à Becket' and 'Our Lady of Walsingham,' and had dared to hint that the congealed milk of the Virgin exhibited at the one was a mixture of chalk and white of egg, and that the immense wealth of the other would be of more use if given to the poor. The result of the royal inquiry convinced Henry VIII. that the 'milk of our Lady' was 'chalk or white lead,' and that Thomas à Becket was no saint at all, but a rebel against the royal prerogative of Henry II.

Dissolution of the monasteries and destruction of shrines.

The result of the visitation was the dissolution at once of the smaller, and a few years afterwards of the larger monasteries, the monks being pensioned off, and the remainder of their vast estates being vested in the king.

Reform of the Universities.

The universities as well as the monasteries were visited by the Commissioners, and that reform was carried out at the universities which Colet, forty years before, had begun at Oxford; a reform which converted them from schools of the *old* into schools of the *new* learning. 'The learning of the wholesome doctrines of Almighty God and the three tongues, Latin, Greek, and Hebrew, which be requisite for the understanding of Scripture,' were specially enjoined, while the old scholastic text-books became waste paper and were treated as such.

Parliament of 1529-36 dissolved.

These were the final labors of the memorable Parliament which begun in 1529, accomplished the revolt from Rome, and was now dissolved in 1536.

One step further the Reformation went under Cranmer and Cromwell. In 1536 the Scriptures themselves, in the English translation of Tindal, revised and completed by Coverdale, were ordered to be placed in every church, and the clergy were instructed to exhort all men to read them. Thus England owes the basis of her noble translation of the Bible to William Tindal. He lived to see it thus published by royal authority, but soon after fell a victim to persecution in Flanders, and ended his heroic life in a martyr's death.

Tindal's translation of the Bible sanctioned.

Martyrdom of Tindal.

(*m*) *Later Years of Henry VIII.* (1536–1547).

In 1536 Queen Catherine died, and in the same year the still more miserable Anne Boleyn was divorced, and, with the partners of her alleged guilt, beheaded.

Execution of Anne Boleyn.

The sole offspring of this ill-fated marriage was the Princess *Elizabeth*, and she now, like the Princess Mary, was declared illegitimate, and thus the succession was again uncertain.

To meet this difficulty the king married his third queen, *Jane Seymour*, and parliament settled the succession upon her offspring, and in default of a direct heir, upon such person as Henry VIII. should name in his will.

Henry VIII. marries Jane Seymour.

Meanwhile, this time of renewed unsettlement was chosen by the papal party for a general rebellion, known as '*The Pilgrimage of Grace.*' Reforms had gone too fast for many. It was not to be expected that so great a change should meet with no opposition. It would have been strange if Sir Thomas More and Bishop Fisher had

A Catholic rebellion breaks out in the North, fomented by the Pope and Reginald Pole.

It is quelled.

been the only martyrs on the papal side. The rebellion was chiefly in Lincolnshire and Yorkshire. It was headed by some of the old aristocracy, and no doubt was fomented by the issue just before of a papal bull of excommunication against Henry VIII., and by expectations of foreign aid. *Reginald Pole*, a relation of the king's, and afterwards legate and Cardinal Archbishop of Canterbury under Queen Mary, did his best, under papal encouragement, to bring about a holy war against England, and thereby enforce obedience to the papal power. But these schemes of war from without came to nought, and the insurrection within was promptly met and quelled. The royal supremacy was vindicated by the execution of the chief rebels, and the Catholic reaction thus postponed till the days of Queen Mary.

Birth of Edward VI., and death of the Queen.

Henry VIII. marries Anne of Cleves,

Probably the birth at this moment of a long-desired prince (afterwards *Edward VI.*), did as much as the execution of the rebels to assure the stability of Henry's throne. But it cost the life of the queen-mother, and made another marriage a state necessity. While Cromwell was pursuing his policy, dissolving the remaining monasteries, demolishing the shrines of Walsingham and Canterbury, and transferring their wealth to the royal exchequer, he had once more to arrange a match for Henry. His choice fell upon *Anne of Cleves*, a connexion of the Elector of Saxony. It fell in with Cromwell's policy to use the opportunity to bring about a Protestant alliance, and Henry married in 1539 Anne of Cleves.

but does not like her.

But how was it likely that he should fall in love with a fourth wife who was plain-looking and spoke not a word of English? He soon was weary of his new match, and as Wolsey was sacrificed to secure the divorce of Catherine, so Cromwell was now sacrificed to secure a divorce from Anne of Cleves. Another Tudor trial, with less show of justice even than those of the Duke of Buckingham and Sir Thomas More, paved the way for the state necessity. Cromwell, like Cranmer, had been all along half a Protestant at heart. Unless he had been, he could hardly have carried through as he did for the king, the successful revolt of England from the ecclesiastical empire of Rome. The king had profited by that, but he now meant to profit by Cromwell's fall. So Cromwell died upon the scaffold as a traitor.

Cromwell sacrificed to get rid of her.

Henry was soon rid of Anne of Cleves. The Protestant alliance fell through. A sort of reconciliation was made with Charles V., who naturally hated Cromwell more even than he had distrusted Wolsey. And a sort of colour of religion was given to the whole proceeding by the more stringent repression of those heresies towards which the fallen minister was said to have been unduly lenient. This was in 1540.

Reconciliation with Charles V.

The king now married the guilty and unfortunate Catherine Howard, whose turn to die on the scaffold came (so soon!) in 1542; and then at last came the final marriage with Catherine Parr, a virtuous widow, who proved an honourable and efficient royal nurse during the king's few remaining years.

Henry VIII.'s last two marriages.

These years of his decaying health were marked by the renewal of the alliance with Charles V. and breaches of peace with Francis I. Henry's foreign policy ended as it had begun under the shadow of Spanish ascendancy, threatened English invasion of France, French retaliative invasions

Alliance with Spain, and wars with France.

of England, and financial difficulties which always followed in the wake of war. The treasures of Henry VII. sufficed not to supply the means for Henry VIII.'s early wars with France. So again, in spite of the wealth which came to the Crown from the dissolution of monasteries and the destruction of the shrines, the king in his last years found himself with an empty exchequer, and obliged to debase the coinage to obtain the supplies he wanted. He died in Jan. 1547—the year after the death of Luther, just as civil war broke out in Germany, and Charles V. set about conquering Germany with his Spanish soldiers.

Want of money.

Death of Henry VIII. in 1547.

While Germany was passing through this struggle, England was becoming more and more Protestant, under the guidance of Cranmer, who managed the ecclesiastical affairs of England in the short reign of Edward VI.

Reform goes on during the reign of Edward VI.

But a reaction was to follow. On Edward VI.'s death in 1553 the Princess Mary became queen. A Catholic herself, and the wife of Philip II. of Spain, she restored the Catholic faith in England, and tried to quench the English Protestant spirit in blood. But she died in 1558—the same year as Charles V.—and under her successor, the Protestant Queen Elizabeth, the revolt of England from Rome became once for all an established fact. Thenceforth, both in politics and in doctrine, England was a Protestant state.

Catholic reaction under Queen Mary.

England becomes finally Protestant under Queen Elizabeth.

(*n*) *Influence of Henry VIII.'s reign on the English Constitution.*

It has been sometimes said that Henry VIII.'s reign was the reign of a tyrant, and that during his reign the

English parliament was subservient and cringing to the monarch.

How far the constitution was maintained.

To judge of this matter rightly we must remember that England was passing through a great crisis in her history which we have likened to that which was marked by the Diet of Worms in German history. How different the English from the German result! At the Diet of Worms the Emperor and princes acted in opposition to the German people; the necessary reforms were not made, and so there came revolution. In the parliament of 1529–36 the king and House of Commons acted together, and made the necessary reforms; the clergy submitted to them when they saw they must, the dissolution of the monasteries removed the abbots from the House of Lords and placed the lay lords in a majority, and so in the end England was forced from the yoke of the ecclesiastical empire of Rome by constitutional means, without the revolutions and civil wars which followed in Germany.

The revolt from Rome accomplished by constitutional means.

That such a revolution was peaceably wrought by parliament under the guidance of the king's ministers, Cromwell and Cranmer, sustained by most important precedents the power of parliament in the constitution.

The power of parliament maintained.

During his wars, Henry VIII.'s ministers, especially Wolsey, resorted to benevolences and forced loans to obtain supplies. But the fall of Wolsey, and on later occasions the sanction of parliament obtained afterwards by way of indemnity for acts admitted to be illegal, kept up the constitutional principle that the king could levy no taxes without the consent of parliament. The real struggle on this matter came in the days of the Stuarts.

It preserved its control over taxation.

And over the making of new laws.

The new ecclesiastical powers of the king as supreme head of the Church gave rise to new branches of jurisdiction, some of which were of a dangerous kind. Parliament also, by statute, gave to the king's proclamation, within a very restricted range, the force of statutes, but this was repealed in the next reign. And on the whole, the second great constitutional principle on which English freedom is based was well maintained; viz., that the king could make no new laws without consent of parliament,

On the whole the parliaments of Henry VIII. deserve well of Englishmen.

Bearing these things in mind it would be hard to deny that the parliaments of Henry VIII. deserve tolerably well of Englishmen, considering the greatness of the crisis through which the bark of the state had to be steered in their time.

Unjust State trials the chief blot on the reign of Henry VIII.

The greatest blots upon the reign of Henry VIII. were the unjust trials for treason by which the most faithful of ministers were sacrificed to clear away obstacles to royal policy, and the way that sometimes justice was sacrificed to the personal wishes or even passions of the king in connexion with his unhappy matrimonial caprices.

England fared much better than France and Spain.

These things will always stain the memory of Henry VIII., but regarding his reign as a whole it would be unfair to forget that in it a great crisis was passed through without civil war, which left England freed from the ecclesiastical empire of Rome, and under a constitutional monarchy, while France and Spain were left to struggle for centuries more under the double tyranny of the ecclesiastical empire and their own absolute kings.

CHAPTER III.

REVOLT OF DENMARK AND SWEDEN AND (LATER) OF THE NETHERLANDS.

(*a*) *Denmark and Sweden* (*1525–1560*).

Both Denmark and Sweden throw off the yoke of Christian II. and then separate.

DENMARK and Sweden both revolted from Rome, but under peculiar circumstances. From 1520 to 1525 they had both been governed by one king—a wretched tyrant—Christian II., who legally had little power, but following the royal fashion of the day, tried to make himself an absolute monarch. Denmark and Sweden both rebelled, dethroned Christian II., and then went their several ways.

The Swedes elect Gustavus Vasa their king.

In Sweden the people, *i. e.* the citizens and then the peasantry, were sick of the tyranny of their nobles and clergy, as well as their king, and sighed for a good king strong enough to curb them. It was the old story, what the citizens and peasantry of Germany had long sighed for in vain. But in Sweden they got what they wanted. They elected as king *Gustavus Vasa*, a noble who had taken the popular side against their former tyrant; and having elected him, they backed him in carrying out in Sweden very much the same sort of reforms as Henry VIII. had carried out in England. The clergy were humbled, their property seized by the crown, and Sweden, roused to a sense of national life under Gustavus Vasa, took its place among modern nations. It was soon to play a prominent part in the great struggle between Catholic and Protestant powers. The Swedish king, *Gustavus Adolphus*, was the greatest of the Protestant leaders in the Thirty Years' War.

Sweden, under him, becomes a Protestant nation.

In Denmark also (and Norway was under the same crown) a new monarchy succeeded to that of the expelled tyrant. The nobles joined the crown in crushing the power of the clergy. The Danish monarchy became established on the ruins of the Church. Lutheranism was encouraged. Denmark became a Protestant state, and took part, like Sweden, on the Protestant side in the Thirty Years' War.

Denmark also, under her new king, becomes Protestant.

(*b*) *The Revolt of the Netherlands* (*1581*).

The last of the revolts from Rome was that of the Netherlands. It was a revolt not only from Rome but also from Spain. It does not fall altogether within the limits of the era, and so requires only brief notice here.

Philip II., king of Spain and husband of the English queen Mary, tried to enforce the double yoke of Spain and Rome upon the Netherlanders. The Netherlands, it will be remembered, belonged to the Burgundian provinces which came to the Spanish crown by the marriage alliance of the mother of Charles V. He was a Netherlander, and as such popular; but his son, Philip II., was a Spaniard, and felt to be a foreign tyrant. He had entered into close alliance with Rome. If he could, he would have conquered all countries which had revolted from Rome; and in restoring them to Rome, he would have liked to have made them into Spanish provinces. It was in pursuance of these ideas that he encouraged Queen Mary's restoration of the Catholic faith in England, and sent his 'Spanish Armada' to conquer the Protestant Queen Elizabeth. In the same spirit he sent his cruel minister, the Duke of Alva, to force into submission his rebellious subjects in the Netherlands, and to fasten on their necks the double

Policy of Philip II to subject the Netherlanders to Spain and to Rome.

They revolt, and the 'United Provinces' become a Protestant nation.

yoke of Spain and Rome. The result was the revolt of the Netherlands under the Prince of Orange. After a terrible struggle, it was at last successful, and ended in the complete escape of the northern provinces from both the Spanish and Papal yoke. This was in 1581. From that date the 'United Provinces' took their place, like Sweden and Denmark, among the Protestant nations of Europe.

CHAPTER IV.

THE GENEVAN REFORMERS.

(*a*) *Rise of a new School of Reform.*

THE force of the Protestant Revolution was not wholly spent in these national revolts from Rome.

A Protestant movement which was not national,

Although apart from them there was a Protestant movement going on in the minds of the people, both in those nations which revolted from Rome and in those which did not.

but which influenced the Protestants of France, England, Scotland, and America more than Luther did.

We must now turn our attention to the rise of a new school of reform, which led to remarkable results. Luther was too national—too German—a reformer, to admit of his becoming the universal prophet of Protestantism all over the world. Denmark, Sweden, and Norway, coming under German influence, did indeed become Lutheran; but the Protestants of France, England, Scotland, and America are not and never have been Lutherans. They came more under the influence of the Genevan reformers, of whom we must now speak.

(*b*) *John Calvin.*

John Calvin, born 1509.

His 'Institutes,' which gave logical form to the 'Calvinistic' doctrines.

The chief of these was *John Calvin.* He was a Frenchman, born in 1509, and so was twenty-five years younger than Luther. He was educated at the universities of Paris and Orleans, adopted the Augustinian theology, as Wiclif, Huss, and Luther had done before him, and became a Protestant. In France heretics were burned, so he left his home to travel in Italy and Germany. In 1536, just as Erasmus was passing to his rest, he came to Basle, and began his public work as a Protestant reformer by publishing his 'Institutes of the Christian Religion.' It was these 'Institutes' of Calvin which gave rigid logical scholastic form to those Augustinian doctrines which, as we have said, were held in common by most Protestant reformers from Wiclif to Luther, but which have been since called 'Calvinistic.' He differed from Luther both in theory and practice, on those points about which Zwingle and Luther had quarrelled. He rejected transubstantiation, which Luther did not altogether; and he founded his Church, like Zwingle, on the republican basis of the congregation rather than, as Luther did, on the civil power of the prince. He thus was in a sense more Protestant than Luther, though at that time only the Lutherans were called Protestants.

Calvin settles at Geneva.

Geneva soon became the sphere of his actions. It was in a state of anarchy, having rebelled from its bishop, who had been practically both ecclesiastical and civil ruler in one. Other French reformers had settled at Geneva before Calvin, and these shared his stern Protestant doctrines. But Calvin soon proved the most powerful preacher. Like

Savonarola, he rebuked the vices of the people from the pulpit. At first this made him unpopular, and he was driven away; but in 1541 he was recalled by the people, and made practically both civil and religious dictator of the little state.

Becomes a kind of dictator of the Genevan state.

He was in a sense Protestant Pope of Geneva, but deriving his power from the congregation. He and his consistory held it their duty to force men to lead moral lives, go to church, give up dice, dancing, swearing, and so forth; and the council of the city supported this severe exercise of ecclesiastical power by their civil authority. Thus for twenty years Geneva was under the rule of Calvin and his fellow 'saints;' and an intolerant despotic rule it was. Men were excommunicated for insulting Calvin, and sent to prison for mocking at his sermons. To impugn his doctrine was death or banishment. Hired spies watched people's conduct, and every unseemly word dropped in the street came to the ear of the elders. Children were liable to public punishment for insulting their parents, and men and women were drowned in the Rhone for sensual sins. Witchcraft and heresy were capital crimes; and one heretic, Servetus, was burned, with his books hung to his girdle, for honest difference of opinion from Calvin on an abstruse point of divinity.

His severe discipline and intolerance.

The same view of the functions of the Church which led him to exercise this severe discipline, led him also to control education. He founded academies and schools; and when his system was applied to Scotland, as it afterwards was under John Knox, a school as well as a church was planted in every parish.

He founds schools.

(*c*) *Influence of the Genevan School on Western Protestantism.*

His influence on Western Protestantism.

Whatever Calvin did at Geneva would have mattered little to the world if it had stopped there; but it did not. The historical importance of Calvin lies in the fact that he impressed upon Western Protestantism his rigid scholastic creed and his views of ecclesiastical discipline.

The French *Huguenots*, the Scotch *Covenanters*, the English *Puritans*, the '*Pilgrim Fathers*' of New England, all of the Genevan school.

The Protestants of France, called Huguenots, were and are mainly the offspring of Calvinism. John Knox, the reformer of Scotland, and the Scotch Covenanters, were also disciples of Calvin; and so Scotch Protestantism received its impress from Geneva. The Puritans of England were also Calvinists. Cromwell was a Calvinist, and the rule of his 'saints' was on the Genevan model. The Pilgrim Fathers took with them from England to the New England across the Atlantic the Calvinistic creed, and, alas! its intolerance too. So engrained was it in their theological mind that, even though themselves fleeing from persecution, they themselves persecuted in the land of their refuge. Under the rule of the Boston saints there was as little religious liberty as under the rule of Calvin at Geneva.

Their historical importance, and influence on national character.

Nevertheless, the offspring of the Genevan school of reform deserve well of history. However narrow and hard in their creed and Puritanic in their manners, they were men of a sturdy Spartan type, ready to bear any amount of persecution and to push through any difficulties, democratic in their spirit and aggressive in their zeal. The banishment of the Huguenots from

France took away the backbone of her religious life. Scotland would not be what she is but for Knox and his parish schools. England could not afford to lose the Puritan blood which mixes in her veins. New England owes a rich inheritance of stern virtues to her 'Pilgrim Fathers.'

CHAPTER V.

REFORM WITHIN THE CATHOLIC CHURCH.

(*a*) *The Italian Reformers* (*to* 1541).

ONE of the results of the Protestant revolution was the reform of the Catholic Church itself.

We ought never to forget that the Roman Catholic Church of our own times is, in fact, a reformed Church as well as the Protestant Churches. And we must now have patience enough to trace how and by whom its reform was effected.

Efforts at reform within the Church.

Good men of all parties had for long seen the necessity of a practical reform in the morals of the pope, clergy, and monks. And we have seen that the necessity was recognized in high quarters. Ferdinand and Isabella's great minister, Cardinal Ximenes, and the English ministers, Cardinal Morton and Cardinal Wolsey—three cardinals all of great power and undoubted loyalty to Rome—even went so far as to get bulls from the Pope, authorizing them to visit and reform the monasteries. All good men cried out against the crimes of such a pope as Alexander VI. And it is not right to charge the Catholic Church wholesale with these crimes any more than it would be to charge the English nation with the matrimonial sins of Henry VIII.

There was so strong a feeling all through the Church

Improvement in the character of popes.

against these scandals that, after what had happened, they were not likely to occur again. The popes who came after Alexander VI. were not angels, but they were outwardly more decent than he, at all events. Julius II., as we have seen, was the fighting pope. The scandal in his case was his lust of war and the extension of the Papal territory. Leo X. cared more for art and literature than for war, but he, too, had his faults, and the scandal in his case was a doubt whether, after all, he really believed in Christianity. Adrian VI. was an earnest and stern moral reformer—too stern for the times—and his reign was too short to produce much result. Clement VII. was a better man than many, though of blundering politics, letting down the Papal power, and becoming at last the prisoner and the tool of his Spanish conqueror Charles V.

The mediating reformers of Italy.

Valdez, Pole, Contarini.

All this while there were men in Italy of earnest Christian feeling who, like the Oxford reformers, were men of the new school on the one hand, and opposed to the semi-pagan skepticism of the mere 'humanists' of Italy on the other hand. These men longed for reform, not only in morals but also in doctrine. They wanted religion to be made a thing of the heart, that the gross superstition connected with indulgences and other abuses should be set aside, and some of them held the Augustinian doctrine of justification by faith. This gave them a sort of sympathy even with Luther, and they wanted such a reform of the Church as they hoped would win back the Protestants into her fold. *Juan de Valdez*, brother of Charles V.'s secretary (from whose writings we have more than once quoted), was one of them. *Reginald Pole* (who opposed Henry VIII.'s revolt from Rome so strongly) and *Gaspar Contarini* (a Venetian nobleman of the highest character and influence in court circles) were of their number. They had among them eloquent preachers and ladies of rank, fortune, and beauty. They held together and exerted much influence, and there was a time when they seemed to be not without chance of success as mediators between the extreme Catholic and Protestant parties.

Paul III. makes some of them cardinals.

Paul III. became pope in 1534, and the hopes of the reform party were raised by his making Pole and Contarini and some others of their friends cardinals. These men were on the most friendly terms with Erasmus, who in his old age was urging concord on religious parties and purity on the Church. It was rumoured that Erasmus himself was to be made a cardinal, and it was said that a red hat was on the way to Bishop Fisher when he was executed by Henry VIII.

Chances of a reconciliation with Protestants under Paul III.

It was some of these and other signs of the times which cheered Sir Thomas More in his prison with the belief that better days were coming, that there was at least some chance of a reconciliation with the Protestants, and a healing of the schism by which the Church was rent. The prospect was for the moment promising. Paul III. wrote to Erasmus, telling him that he intended to call a council (as Erasmus had urged his predecessors to do) and asking for his influence and help both before and in the council. But things moved slowly. Cardinal Contarini was more zealous for a council than the Pope, who was only half-inclined to it, fearing lest it might abridge his power. At length in 1541—five years after the death of Erasmus—the Pope deputed

Q. J. LIBRARY
K. C. K.

Contarini and Melanchthon try to make peace at the Diet of Ratisbon.

Contarini to meet the Protestants at the Diet of Ratisbon, and to try whether a reconciliation could be arranged with them. He was met by the gentle Melanchthon (Luther distrusting the whole thing and keeping away), and they agreed upon the doctrine of justification by faith as the basis of reunion. For a moment a peace seemed within reach. But alas! other motives came in on the Pope's side. Francis I. urged upon him that concord and unity in Germany would make the Emperor—their common enemy—dangerously strong; and so Paul III. drew back.

But the Pope draws back.

On the other side, Luther scented mischief in any peace with Rome. It was too good to be true; and he even hinted that the devil was somewhere and somehow at work in it.

And Luther also.

So everything was left over for settlement at the council which now at length the Pope was to convene—the famous *Council of Trent.*

Everything left over till the Council of Trent.

But meanwhile another power came upon the stage, which was destined to take the reins out of the hands of the Italian mediating reformers, to close the door for reconciliation forever, and to reform what was left of the Catholic Church on the narrow basis of reaction.

(*b*) *The New Order of the Society of Jesus* (1540).

Ignatius Loyola, a young Spanish knight of noble family, was born in 1491, and so was eight years younger than Luther. He was a soldier in the army of Spain—that land in which the national wars against the Moors had kept up chivalry and the spirit of the old crusaders, in which knights still fought for the Cross against the 'Infidel,' and whose citi-

Ignatius Loyola, a Spanish knight.

zens more than any others felt the romance of the connexion with the New World.

He is wounded in 1521

Loyola was thirty years old, fighting in the Spanish army against an insurrection in Navarre, secretly aided by the French, just after the Diet of Worms, when his leg was shattered by a cannon ball. The one hope of the young knight was such a recovery as would let him return to his soldier's life and pursue his knightly career. He submitted to two cruel operations in this hope, but alas, in vain. After racking torture and fever, which brought him near to the grave, he survived to find his contracted limb still a bar to his hopes. As he lay upon his couch in pain and fever, he changed the scheme of his life. He resolved to become a soldier—a general—in another army, under a higher king, fighting for the cross. Legends of the saints inspired his imagination with dreams still more romantic than the tales of knight-errantry. In his delirium his fevered eye saw visions of the Virgin, and thus he thought he received divine commission to pursue his plan. He would be a true son of the Church, the sworn enemy of her enemies, be they heretics, Jews, or infidels. His creed should be the soldier's creed—obedience to superiors, hard endurance, and dauntless courage. The holy saints of the legends were his patterns. He prepared himself for his work, as they did, by fastings and the severest austerities. His food was bread and water and herbs, his girdle sometimes an iron chain, sometimes prickly briars, his work humble service of the lowest kind, such as dressing the foulest wounds in the hospitals. Then he dwelt for a while in a cavern in solitude, and fasted till he saw visions again, and fancied he had communications with

Resolves to become a general of an army of saints instead of soldiers.

His austerities.

heaven. And now he had perfected his plan—a soldier's plan—to found a religious army, perfect in discipline, in every soldier of which should be absolute devotion to one end, absolute obedience to his superior, with no human ties to hinder and no objects to divert him from the service required. It was in fact to be a new monastic order, and to be called *the Society of Jesus.*

Resolves to found the 'Order of Jesus.'

He must first prepare himself for his generalship by years of study. He began at a common school, and then went to the University of Paris.

To prepare himself studies at the University of Paris.

The next thing was to get round him a few others like himself, and so to form the nucleus of his army. They must be men of power and metal, and all the better if of noble blood and high position.

There was a young Spanish noble at the university of Paris named Francis Xavier. While Loyola was studying at the university he came in contact with him. He watched him, read his mind and character, and then set himself to work to make his own. Xavier sought fame and applause, and just as he got it, Loyola would come in his way with the solemn question, 'What shall it profit if a man gain the whole world and lose his own soul?' Loyola would help him to new triumphs, but as often as they came would come to him again from Loyola the solemn question, 'What shall it profit?' At last the proud spirit of the Spanish noble yielded to the spell. Xavier became a disciple of Loyola; rivalled him in austerities, and ere long became the missionary of the Society, carrying his cross, his Bible, breviary and wallet to India and the Indian Isles, and even to Japan and China, till at last he laid down

At Paris meets Francis Xavier.

Xavier becomes a disciple.

his life after eleven long years of heroic labour, stretched on the sand of the sea-shore of a lonely island in the Chinese seas, with his cross in his hand, tears of holy joy in his eyes, and uttering the words, 'In Thee have I put my trust, let me never be confounded.'

And the great Jesuit missionary to the Indies, China, and Japan.

Of such stuff were the first Jesuits made—a type of human nature which, rising up as it did just then, was of immense import to the future of the Catholic Church. It was in truth a reaction from the looseness both of morals and creed which had marked the recent condition of the Church. These men were pious, earnest, and devoted to the Church, because their minds were cast in a mould which allowed them still to believe in her pretensions. They had all the piety, fervour, energy, and boldness of the Protestant Reformers, but their reform took another direction. Instead of going back to St. Augustine as their exponent of the Bible, they took St. Francis and the mediæval saints as their models, and rested with absolute faith on the authority of the mediæval Church. To reform the Catholic Church to mediæval standards by the formation of a new monastic order, having for its corner-stone the absolute surrender of free inquiry and free thought, and absolute obedience to supreme ecclesiastical authority—this was the project of Loyola. It was not abortive. Before its founder died he had succeeded in founding more than a hundred Jesuit colleges or houses for training Jesuits, and an immense number of educational establishments under their influence. He had many thousands of Jesuits in the rank and file of his order. He had divided Europe, India, Africa, and Brazil into twelve Jesuit provinces, in each of which he had his Jesuit offi-

Character of the Jesuits.

Their success and influence.

cer, whilst he, their general, residing at Rome, wielded an influence over the world rivaling, if it did not exceed in power, that of popes and kings. Its very success was the cause of its ultimate doom. The nations of Europe, after the experience of some generations, found it to interfere with their national freedom, as they had done the old ecclesiastical empire of Rome. They ultimately banished the Jesuits because of their power and because their presence and their plots endangered the safety of the state. But as yet the Society of Jesus was young, and had its work before it. The Order received Papal sanction in 1540.

Causes of its ultimate unpopularity.

(*c*) *The Council of Trent* (*1545—1555*).

The Council of Trent was opened in 1545. Cardinal Contarini, who had been the Pope's confidant in matters relating to the Council, died before it assembled. But Cardinal Pole, Contarini the younger, and others of the mediating party, were members of the Council. They took the same line as at Ratisbon, and urged the doctrine of justification by faith as common Christian ground. But the Jesuits in the Council, under the instruction of Loyola, opposed it with all their might. The dispute was long and hot, and even led to personal violence. One holy Father was so angry that he seized another by the beard. The Jesuits prevailed, and carried the decision of the Council their own way. Pole, on the plea of ill health, had left the Council, and the younger Contarini followed his example. It was clear there was to be no reconciliation. The party of reaction had gained the day.

Council of Trent meets in 1545.

The Jesuits prevail over the mediating Reformers.

No sooner had the party of reaction taken the lead than Cardinal Caraffa (afterwards Pope Paul IV). obtained powers to introduce into Rome the Inquisition—that terrible tribunal of persecution which in Spain had slain and banished so many Moors, Jews, and heretics under the sanction of the zeal of Queen Isabella. Persecution began, and some of the members of the mediating party were among its first victims.

Inquisition introduced into Rome by Cardinal Caraffa, afterwards Pope Paul IV.

This was the work of the Council of Trent at its early sessions. Then owing to a disagreement between the Pope and Charles V., it was adjourned for some years. Paul III. died, and two succeeding popes, before it really got to work again to any purpose under Paul IV. This was in 1555, the year in which, after the long struggle between Charles V. and Germany, the peace of Augsburg was come to, by which the revolt of the Protestant princes from Rome was first legally recognized as a thing which must be.

Council adjourned till 1555, under Paul IV.

The Council of Trent had now in its later sessions to reorganize what was left of the Catholic Church. It could not, and did not try to undo the revolts. The Jesuits were the ruling power. Reaction was the order of the day. Clerical abuses were corrected, and some sort of decency enforced. Provisions were made for the education of priests and for their devotion in future to active duties. But in points of doctrine there was reaction instead of concession. The divine authority of the Pope was confirmed. The creed of the Church was laid down once for all in rigid statements, which henceforth must be swallowed by the faithful. Finally, the Inquisition, imported from Spain, was extended to other countries, and charged with the suppression of heretical doctrines. In a word, the rule of

The Roman Catholic Church reformed in morals, but much more rigid than ever in creed.

the ecclesiastical empire was strengthened, and the bonds of the scholastic system tightened; but not for Christendom—only for those nations who still acknowledged the ecclesiastical supremacy of Rome.

The Church was thus both reformed and narrowed by the decrees of the Council of Trent. Henceforth it tolerated within its fold neither the old diversity of doctrine on the one hand, nor the old laxity of morals on the other hand, and henceforth it was by no means coextensive with Western Christendom, as it once had been. It is now generally called the 'Roman Catholic Church,' to distinguish it from the 'Catholic Church' of the Middle Ages, from which it and so many other churches have sprung.

CHAPTER VI.

THE FUTURE OF SPAIN AND FRANCE.

(*a*) *The Future of Spain.*

CHARLES V. had inherited the absolute monarchy prepared for him by Ferdinand and Isabella.

The strengthening of the central power was needful to create a modern nation. But the history of England has taught us that the central power may be strong without being an absolute monarchy.

Growth of absolute monarchy in Spain.

The vice in the Spanish system was the attempt to seek national power by subjecting all classes within the nation to the absolute will of the monarch.

This vice was the worm at the root of the greatness of Spain, and silently wrought the ruin in which she finds herself to-day.

Philip II.

Philip II., the son and successor of Charles, was, like his predecessor, an absolute king.

In close league with the Papacy.

It was during the period of Spanish supremacy in Europe that the Council of Trent decreed the absolute ecclesiastical supremacy of the Pope. It was the Spanish Jesuits who had brought this about. It was by adopting the Spanish Inquisition that the ecclesiastical triumph was to be enforced upon the people. And now Philip II.'s aim, as we have seen, was to establish both the absolute power of the Spanish throne and the papal supremacy, wherever his rule extended, by the sword and the Inquisition.

Seeks to establish Spanish and Papal supremacy together.

Fatal results of his policy.

England felt this influence in the days of Queen Mary, but happily Philip II.'s Spanish Armada failed to conquer England under Elizabeth. He tried his fatal policy in the Netherlands, and, as we have seen, they revolted, made good their revolt from both Spain and Rome, and became a free Protestant nation. He tried the same fatal policy in Spain, and with what result? The Spaniard of to-day points to the civil and ecclesiastical despotism of the reign of Philip II. (from which, unhappily, Spain could not shake herself free, as the Netherlands did) as the point in her history when her national life was strangled, her literature began to lose its power, her commerce to languish. To fatten an absolute monarchy, and armies of officials, soldiers, and priests, in course of generations the nation was ruined. Spain for a while was big on the map. For a while she maintained her supremacy in Europe, but her greatness was not the result of her advance on the path of modern civilization. It was not the result of true national life—the welding together of all classes into a compact nation. It rather belonged to the old order of things, and so was doomed to decay.

(*b*) *The future of France.*

Absolute monarchy answered no better for France than for Spain.

France was a prey during the era to the evils caused by the constant wars of Francis I. While the two absolute monarchs strove for supremacy in Italy, their subjects alike suffered. The recklessness of the ambition of Francis I. showed itself in the way in which, while persecuting heresy in France, he was ready to ally himself with the Protestants of Germany, or even the Turks, if need be, to gain his military ends. He bequeathed his ambition for military glory and supremacy to his successors.

Everything sacrificed to gratify the ambition of the absolute **monarchy** under **Francis I.**

France, though a Catholic power, fought on the Protestant side in the Thirty Years' War, and one result of it was that the supremacy of Spain ended and that of France began. But French, no less than Spanish supremacy, was the growth of absolute monarchy, contrary to the true interests of the French nation. It was gradually ripening the seeds which were already sown, and which bore fruit in the great Revolution of 1789, and in the alternate republics and despotisms under which France has since suffered so much. The want of common feeling and interest between the citizens of the towns and peasants of the rural districts which began so early in French history still continues to perplex her rulers, and so does the lust for military glory and supremacy in Europe which also is an old inheritance of the French people.

The curse which her absolute monarchy was to France.

The way in which the Protestant revolution was met in France also left scars upon the nation which may be traced to-day. Under Francis I., Calvinism spread in

France among the nobility, whose order had been humbled to make way for the absolute monarchy. This gave rise in the next era to religious wars, in which some of the Protestant nobility headed a rebellion against the Catholic throne. These civil wars lasted forty years, and cost the lives, it is said, of more than a million Frenchmen.

Struggle with the Huguenots in France.

In France the persecution of heresy was political as well as religious. Political ambition and intrigue, as well as religious bigotry, prompted it, and stained the pages of French history with crimes unique in their blackness.

The massacre of St. Bartholomew in 1572 was the diabolical work of the queen, Catherine de' Medici, to maintain her political power. She had coquetted with the Huguenots when it served her purpose. She tried to exterminate them by the massacre of 20,000—some say 100,000—in one fatal night. The Edict of Nantes in 1598 ended the civil wars and granted a respite from persecution, but its revocation in 1685 resulted in the banishment of the Huguenots from France. Some of them came to Protestant England, and brought with them their silk and their looms. Thus France by her intolerance lost one arm of her national industry and an important element from her national character. The want of cohesion and unity of interest between various classes in France was increased by the banishment of the Huguenots. There is even now a middle term wanting—a missing link—between her religious and her republican elements. The Puritans—the religious republicans—were that middle term in England.

Massacre of St. Bartholomew in 1572.

Toleration for a time under the Edict of Nantes.

Its revocation in 1685, and the banishment of the Huguenots, who come to England.

CHAPTER VII.

GENERAL RESULTS OF THE ERA OF THE PROTESTANT REVOLUTION.

(*a*) *On the Growth of National Life.*

Influence of the Protestant revolution on national life.

WE have now traced the course of the Protestant revolution, and marked both its direct results upon those nations which revolted from Rome, and also its indirect results upon Rome herself and those nations which remained in allegiance to her ecclesiastical empire.

Where it succeeded.

The revolution was obviously only partially successful. Where it succeeded it produced reform—the Protestant nations had gained one substantial step towards independent national life and towards the blending of all classes within them into one community.

Where it failed.

Where it failed, it produced, as every unsuccessful revolution does, *reaction*. The Catholic nations seemed to gain in the outward signs of strength by the alliance which resulted between the civil and ecclesiastical powers within them. But it was an alliance intended to strengthen the absolute power of the Crown and of the ecclesiastical empire, and thereby all the more to enthrall the people. Henceforth, both in France and in Spain, the nation was more than ever enthralled under the double despotism of Crown and Church. The Inquisition may be taken as the symbol of the one kind of despotism, and the French Bastille of the other. The two despotisms acting together tended, as we have seen, to destroy national life, to increase the separation of classes and prevent their being welded together by common interests into one community. It postponed their progress on the path of modern civilization and ended in a series of alternate revolutions and reactions, out of which it is hard to see a final escape. So hard is it for nations to cast off the fruit, however bitter, of seeds sown even centuries ago!

Where it partially failed and partially succeeded, as in Switzerland and Germany, we have seen that it resulted in civil wars and in the postponement of the growth of their national life almost to our own times. In Switzerland the people were already free, but in Germany, where serfdom still prevailed, the emancipation of the peasantry was postponed till the beginning of the nineteenth century.

Where it partly failed and partly succeeded.

(*b*) *On the Relations of Nations to each other.*

The Protestant struggle apparently did little or nothing to secure progress in civilization in the dealings between nations. The events of the era show that the notion of universal empire which had marked the old order of things was not yet fully given up. The aim after extension of empire which went along with it we have noticed throughout. The struggle between the two absolute monarchies of Spain and France for supremacy in Christendom, the efforts of the princes of the House of Hapsburg to unite as many countries as they could under their rule, the designs that both France and Spain had upon Italy, the revived claims of Henry VIII. to the old English possessions in France—in all this there was little sign of progress from the old to the new order of things. Although the Oxford reformers were faithful in enjoining upon princes an international policy based upon the golden rule, and having for its object not the aggrandizement of the prince

Small improvement in the dealings between nations.

The Oxford reformers not listened to in this.

but the weal of the nation, the popes and princes still preferred to follow the maxims of "*the Prince*" of Machiavelli, rather than those of the "*Christian Prince*" of Erasmus. They still, as Erasmus said, treated the people too much as "cattle in the market."

Nor was the immediate result of the Protestant revolution any cessation from international strife. For the next hundred years there was almost incessant strife between Catholic and Protestant powers.

But Henry VIII. was the last English king to dream of recovering France.

Though, however, Henry VIII. himself hankered again and again after the realization of the empty title of King of France; yet practically we may say that Henry VIII.'s dreams were the last in which English monarchs have indulged on that subject.

And *Hugo Grotius* was born before the century was out.

And though the attempts to urge sounder views on international matters did not succeed in this era, yet they were not made wholly in vain. Before the century was out was born *Hugo Grotius*, the father of the present system of international law, who was well acquainted with the works of Erasmus, and like him rejected Machiavellian principles and sought to base the law of nations upon the golden rule.

(*c*) *Influence on the Growth of National Languages and Literature.*

In no point was the effect of the Protestant struggle more clearly marked than in the stride it gave, as it were all at once, to the growth of national languages and literature.

In Germany we noticed how Luther and Hutten appealed to the people as well as to the learned; how, first writing in Latin for scholars, they soon found it needful to write in German for the people; how Luther introduced wood-cuts to make his appeals to the popular ear still more vivid and telling. All this promoted the growth of a national popular literature. This turning from Latin to German was in fact throwing off in one point the yoke of the scholastic system, and was in itself a great step in advance for the nation to have taken. The crowning gift of Luther to the German people was in fact his German Bible and his German hymns. The earnest vigorous German in which they are written fixed the future style of the language. The German spoken to-day is the German of Luther's Bible and hymns. They have been better known by the German people than any other literature, and so have done more than perhaps anything else to form the German language, and with it in no small degree the national character.

Luther's Bible and hymns fix the character of the German language.

It was so in some measure in France. Calvin did not gain so great a hold on the French nation as Luther did on the German, but still his French Writings did very much the same thing for the French language that Luther's Bible did for the German.

Influence of Calvin's writings on the French language.

In England, too, the same thing is to be marked. The fact that the religious controversies of the times were carried on by books and pamphlets, not in Latin but in English, gave a stimulus to English literature, and prepared the way for the succeeding generations which were to give England her Shakespeare and her Milton. Nor can it be forgotten that the noble English version of the Bible has done as much as other versions in other countries to fix the character of mo

Influence of Tindal's New Testament on the English version of the Bible, and so upon the English language.

dern English. The simplicity, terseness, and power of the English version, to which the taste of England, after frequent wanderings, again and again returns as to its best classical model, we owe, and this should not be forgotten, to the poor, persecuted, but noble-minded English reformer, William Tindal, who, in his English New Testament, set a type which others in completing the translation of the whole Bible loyally followed.

(*d*) *Effect in Stimulating National Education.*

The same movement which promoted so much the growth of national language and literature, also did much to throw open the gates of knowledge to the people by fostering education and schools.

Schools founded by Savonarola, Colet and others, Luther, Calvin, Knox, the Pilgrim Fathers, and the Jesuits.

Savonarola founded schools in Florence. Colet set a noble example in England, and the next generation followed it by establishing the grammar-schools which so often bear the name of King Edward VI. Luther and the Protestant German states established common schools. Calvin did the same thing in Geneva, and Calvin's disciple, John Knox, in Scotland. Finally, the Pilgrim Fathers carried the same zeal for education to their colonies in New England. Even the Jesuits made a great point of education, and became noted wherever they went for their educational establishments. So that both in Catholic and Protestant countries a great stimulus was given to popular education during the era, while the fact that at least some of the property of the dissolved monasteries was diverted to educational purposes in connexion with the Universities and otherwise, gave a somewhat similar stimulus also to higher education.

(*e*) *Influence on Domestic Life.*

There are few things, if any, more important to the steady growth of a free nation than the maintenance of domestic virtues and the sanctities of family life.

Political importance of domestic life.

The domestic instincts, more than any others, were the first germs of national life. In Teutonic nations especially the powerful ties of family life, widening in their sphere extended from the family to the tribe, from the tribe to the nation, introducing law and order and peaceful relations within the sphere embraced by them.

Danger to it from the existence in a country of large celibate classes.

Now the domestic virtues of nations had been in great danger of decay, and no doubt had suffered enormously through the influence of so large a body of clergy, monks, and nuns in a forced state of celibacy.

This system sapped the foundations of domestic life by holding up the married state as lower in virtue than that of celibacy, by cutting off so large a number of people from the natural influences of home-life, and still further by promoting in a terrible degree immorality and crime.

Dissolution of monasteries and permission to the clergy to marry, a step in civilization.

The dissolution of the monasteries and permission of the marriage of the parochial clergy were in themselves steps gained in civilization of great importance in a moral and political, as well as in a religious point of view.

(*f*) *Influence on Popular Religion.*

In yet another way did the Protestant revolution succeed in promoting national life and the aims of Christian civilization.

It made religion less a thing of the clergy and more a thing of the people. It gave the people religious services in their own languages instead of in an unknown tongue. By placing within their reach the Christian Scriptures in their own language it led them to think for themselves, and to be directly influenced by Christianity as taught by its founder and apostles. It tended to strengthen individual conviction and conscience, and so ultimately it led, though with many drawbacks, to further steps being gained towards freedom of thought.

The Protestant movement popularized religion,

It is well to mark also that this bringing of religion nearer home to the individual conscience of the masses of the people, and cultivation of individual responsibility rather than reliance on a priesthood or a church, tended to bring it more into harmony, not only with the tendencies of modern civilization but also with the essential character of Christianity itself, as conceived by its founder and his apostles, and so to make it once more the great civilizing influence which from the first it was intended to be.

and brought it into harmony with true Christianity and modern civilization.

Christianity was without doubt the power which more than anything else produced the great movement of the era, and turned the civilization of the future into the course we have described. The mere humanists had not succeeded in impressing the semi-pagan stamp of their philosophy upon it. Had they done so the principle of the old Roman civilization—the good of the few at the expense of the many—might have marked the civilization of the future as it had done that of the past. But we have seen it was the men of deepest Christian convictions—the religious reformers—who suc-

Modern civilization owes its chief characteristic to Christianity.

ceeded in giving their impress to the era. It is thus to Christianity more than to anything else that we owe the direction given in the era to modern civilization, its characteristic aim to attain the highest good for the whole community.

(*g*) *Want of Progress in Toleration.*

There was one thing especially in which there seemed to be reaction rather than progress during the era, viz. in toleration.

We said that one great work of the era was to set men's minds free from ecclesiastical and scholastic thraldom—to set both science and religion free, for without this freedom there could be no real progress in civilization.

Change from Catholic to Protestant creeds was change from one rigid scholastic creed to another equally rigid.

In fact, an immense number of minds had got free from that particular ecclesiastical and scholastic thraldom against which they had rebelled in becoming Protestant. And this in itself was no small result. But what has already been said must have made it clear that the Protestant reformers, in adopting the theology of St. Augustine, and insisting upon their followers adopting the new Protestant creeds, did but appeal from the scholastic standards of their day to others just as rigid.

Small connexion between claiming freedom of thought and conceding it to others.

The Oxford Reformers had aimed at leaving people open to form their own honest judgment on various points of theology and practice, according to their own consciences, and urged that people with different opinions and practice might be members of the same Christian Church, have charity one towards another, and agree to differ without quarrelling. But how hard a thing it was to get people to do this we see from the case of Sir Thomas More himself, who, though he had advocated toleration in his 'Utopia,' yet afterwards, seeing the anarchy Protestantism had led to on the Continent, and fearing its spreading to England, became himself a persecutor. We must not be surprised after this that the Protestant Reformers failed also in the same respect. It is strange to see how little connexion there seems to be between claiming freedom of thought and conceding it to others.

So persecution did not make the persecuted tolerant.

Lutherans persecuted Catholics as well as Catholics Protestants; and, worse still, they persecuted their fellow-Protestants who followed Zwingle and Calvin rather than Luther. So Calvin put Servetus to death, and exercised a thoroughly intolerant rule in Geneva. So the English Government, after the revolt from Rome, persecuted Protestants, and soon after ordered by statute practices which a few years before they had condemned. So the Catholic Government of Queen Mary shed the blood of Protestants again. So the English Protestant Church of after generations persecuted the Puritans. So finally, the Puritans, fleeing from persecution to New England, put people to death for no other crime than that they honestly preached doctrines differing from their own! Looking at these facts, one would certainly say that the Protestant struggle had not made men more tolerant!

Yet toleration was after all one of the ultimate results of the Protestant revolution.

And yet, in spite of this temporary failure, toleration was a distant fruit of the great movement we have traced. In this era its first seeds were sown. Sir Thomas More's 'Utopia' was perhaps the first clear statement of the doctrine of toleration. The works of Erasmus did something, probably more than is known, to prepare the minds of men for its ultimate adoption. The strength of conscientious conviction which Protestantism created made men claim freedom as a right, and after all, the men who were fighting the battle of toleration with most effect, were the men whose strength of conscientious conviction made them endure persecution rather than surrender their freedom of conscience, even though they themselves, under other circumstances, might have been persecutors.

(*h*) *The Causes why the Success of the Era was so partial.*

We might, in view simply of its immediate results—the wars and bloodshed, and anarchy, persecutions, and heartburnings which came out of it—be inclined to regard the failures of the era of the Protestant revolution as greater than the good we owe to it.

This would be false. It would be to forget that progress in civilization is of necessity like that of the advancing tide, made up of ebbs and flows. It is well also to note clearly the cause of the failures, and especially of those of which we have just been speaking.

Progress must be gradual.

Let us ask ourselves why did not the human mind in this era free itself from its trammels, claim its true freedom, and concede it to everyone? The answer is, that it was impossible. The range of knowledge was too narrow. Men's minds could not take a broader view of things than the horizon of their knowledge let them.

Limited by the range of men's knowledge.

Let us try to realize what were the bounds of their knowledge in some directions.

They knew that the earth is a globe, and in their own time Magellan, for the first time, had sailed round it

Limited view of the universe.

But they thought the earth was in the centre of the universe, and that all the heavenly bodies move round it every twenty-four hours. The notion that it was the earth that moved they thought to be absurd. We should *see* the motion, they said. At the rate it would have to move, it would leave the clouds behind it as it went, and towers and church steeples would be thrown down by the violence of so rapid a motion!

The earth still thought to be in the centre.

So the earth stands still, they maintained in the centre of the universe. The heavenly bodies were supposed to rotate on what were called *crystalline spheres.* The first was the sphere of the moon—all things confined within it were called *sublunary* things. They were supposed by some to be under such pressure as made the heaviest things all tend towards the centre, while the lightest things tended upwards. It was sometimes said that it was in the nature of fire and air to rise, while it was the nature of water and earth to fall towards the centre. In rough ways like these they tried to account for the facts which are now attributed to the force of gravitation. The spheres beyond the moon were called *celestial* spheres. First, they thought, came those of Mercury, Venus, and the Sun, then in order those of Mars, Jupiter, and Saturn; then that of the fixed stars, and, outside all, a ninth sphere, called *primum mobile*, which gave motion to all the others. They believed further, in a vague way, that heaven came beyond. Theologians speculated upon what sort of a sphere that of heaven must be, and Erasmus, in his 'Praise of Folly,' laughed at their 'creating new spheres at pleasure, this the largest and most beautiful being added that, forsooth, happy spirits

The crystalline spheres.

Heaven beyond.

might have room enough to take a walk, to spread their feasts, or play at ball.'

Such was the universe of spheres, one within the other, which they thought all moved round the earth in the centre every twenty-four hours. It was a small thing altogether, compared with the vastly wider and grander universe, a little bit of which modern science has revealed to us, but it was a marvellous universe still, and its mysteries filled them with awe when they thought of it.

The motions of the spheres regarded with awe,

When asked questions about it, some wise men like Erasmus answered, 'God only knows.' But more superstitious minds gave far different answers. Luther, who saw the action of the Devil in every accident which befell him, stood aghast at the magic motions of the celestial spheres, as 'no doubt done by some angel.' Many wise men still believed in astrology. They could not bring themselves to believe that the stars and planets, looking down upon our world, had not some magic meaning. When comets came, they saw in them ominous presages of coming events. Pico and Ficino, Colet, Erasmus, and More had all tried to laugh people out of belief in astrology. Luther, too, laughed at it, but Melanchthon still held on to the old belief in spite of Luther's arguments and jests. How can there be anything in astrology, Luther used to say to him, since Jacob and Esau were born under the same star!

and in popular superstition referred to angels.

Astrology.

Laughed at by some, but believed in by others.

The same kind of superstition which attributed the motions of the planets to angels, and magic influence on the affairs of men to the stars, made men the more readily believe in visions and inspirations, such as we have seen in the case

Belief in visions and inspirations.

of the wilder reformers from Savonarola down to Münzer and Loyola. Luther himself was remarkably free from these things—he never claimed either visions or inspirations, as the wilder prophets did; but, as an instance of how superstitious even he was, it may be mentioned that he and Melanchthon devoutly believed that a monster had been found in the Tiber, with the head of an ass, the body of a man, and the claws of a bird. After searching their Bibles to find out what the prodigy meant, they concluded that it was one of the signs and wonders which were to precede the fall of the papacy, and published a pamphlet about it.

and in prodigies.

Luther again, and probably everybody else, believed in witchcraft. Hundreds and thousands of poor wretches were burned for the supposed crime of having sold themselves to the powers of evil, and having held communion with evil spirits. And stranger still is it that the number of witches burned was rapidly on the increase. There were more witches burned in the 16th century than in any previous one, and more still in the next.

Universal belief in witchcraft.

Witches as well as heretics burned.

Heresy and witchcraft were looked upon as nearly allied, and probably the zeal against both grew together. Nor was the cruel death allotted to these supposed crimes out of proportion to that of others. Thousands and thousands of people were hung in England for no other crime but that of vagrancy and 'sturdy begging.' The system of criminal law was everywhere brutal. Soon after the Peasants' War, the Prince Bishop of Bamberg published a popular criminal law book for the benefit of his subjects—his poor crushed peasantry among others—in which

Cruelty of criminal law everywhere.

were inserted wood-cuts of thumb-screws, the rack, the gallows, the stake, pincers for pulling out the tongue, men with their eyes put out or their heads cut off, or mangled on the wheel, or suspended by the arms with weights hung on their feet, and so on, and then, to add the terrors of another world (as if these humanly inflicted tortures were not enough), there was a blasphemous picture representing the day of judgment, and the hobgoblins carrying off their victims to hell. The Prince Bishop, we may suppose, had learned a lesson from Luther, and produced, as he thought, a *good book for the laity*, meant, not like Luther's, to dispel men's fears of the Pope, but to frighten his poor subjects into submission to his episcopal and princely authority. This may be taken as an example both of the way in which civil and ecclesiastical power were sometimes blended together, and of the brutality of the times.

The age not prepared for toleration.

Such an age was not ready for wider views. Further knowledge of the laws of nature must come before popular superstitions could be removed, and until this was done it would be in vain to look for much progress in toleration and freedom of thought.

(*i*) *Beginning of Progress in Scientific Inquiry.*

Beginning of scientific inquiry.

Nevertheless the era of which we have spoken was the beginning of the era of freedom. From it dated a great awaking of human thought. Its great geographical discoverers had opened new fields for scientific inquiry. Not only had navigators been round the world, but they had seen as it were the rest of the sky. They had seen the south polestar and the Southern Cross in their voyages round the Cape of Good Hope. Thus was not only their geographical but also their astronomical knowledge widened.

A beginning of truer and wider views of the universe was almost a natural consequence, but to attain to it scholastic and even ecclesiastical bonds had to be loosened. A scientific Luther was wanted to burst through them, but the age did not produce such a man. Nevertheless it did produce one who silently lived and worked timidly to demonstrate that the motions of the planets and the moon can only be fully accounted for on the hypothesis that the sun and not the earth is the centre of the solar system, that the moon is a satellite of the earth, and that the sphere of the fixed stars is at an immense distance from the farthest of the planetary spheres. Our present theory of the solar system is still sometimes called after his name, *Copernican*, though it is far more truly called after Newton.

Nicolas Copernicus.

Nicolas Copernicus died two years before Luther. His story is that of a brave life, and one which may well be set by the side of that of other great men of the era. Educated at the University of Cracow, in Poland, he afterwards proceeded to Rome, and studied under the best astronomer of the day. Then he spent a long life in working out his grand scientific problem from careful observations and according to the best lights he could get. He was loyal to the Church. He did not want to be a heretic, and yet the great truth he had to tell was contrary to the teaching of the Church. For thirty-six years—all the time the Protestant struggle was raging—he was working at the immortal book in which his observations and discoveries were embodied, but he did not venture to publish it till under Paul III. there was a lull in the ecclesiastical storm. He was then an old man, in broken health; his book was in the printer's hands when he was on his death-bed. All he cared for now was to see it safe in print before he died. He waited at death's door day after day. At last the printer's messenger came with the printed book. He received it with tears in his eyes, composed himself and died. This was in 1543, and he was seventy years old. He was followed by other scientific discoverers—Tycho Brahe, Kepler, and Galileo. Thus the brave life of Copernicus may be taken as marking the epoch when scientific thought and inquiry began to free itself from theological trammels and to seek to discover the laws of nature by a simple, childlike, and careful observation of facts. But necessarily many generations must pass away before men became used to scientific modes of research and of thought.

His great work not published till he was on his death-bed.

CHAPTER VIII.

ECONOMIC RESULTS OF THE ERA.

AMONGST the powers which belonged to the old order of things, and which were going out, the feudal system was mentioned as silently giving way under the combined influence of the growth of the central power in the modern nations and of commerce.

Results of the era on what remained of the feudal system.

The results of the era in hastening the dissolution of the feudal system require a few words of further explanation.

In Germany, we have seen, serfdom—the essential of which, it will be remembered, was services of forced

In Germany personal services continued.

personal labor in return for occupation of land—remained unchanged, except for the worse, after the Peasants' War, and lasted on till the beginning of the present century.

In France feudal rents and payments chiefly *in kind* continued till 1798.

In France serfdom was a thing of the past, but there remained numberless feudal rents and payments made *chiefly in kind* (*i. e.* in produce of the land) which the peasantry went on paying till the French Revolution of 1798.

In England feudal rents were chiefly in fixed money payments.

In England serfdom was gone, but had left behind it *fixed rents in money* instead of the old feudal payments in services or in kind. These rents were originally nearly equal to the annual value of the land. But an economic cause came into play during the era which, while it did not help the German peasant nor the French peasant who paid his rent in kind, lessened the burden of the English peasant's rent so much as to change his position gradually into that of an absolute owner.

Effect of the discovery of the silver mines in the New World.

This economic cause was the discovery of the silver and gold mines in the New World.

The fall in the value of money caused a great rise in prices.

It made silver more plentiful, and therefore cheaper in proportion to other things, such as corn and land. In other words, it increased the price in pence and shillings of almost everything. A penny or a shilling would not buy so much corn after as before the new mines were discovered; and as in England Tudor monarchs at the same time for their own purposes, lessened the weight of silver in the penny and shilling by about one-third, the effect of the increased plenty of silver was made all the greater; 6*s.* would buy a quarter of wheat at the beginning of the century, it took 38*s.* 6*d.* to buy a quarter of wheat at the end of it. The annual value of land was about 4*d.* per acre at the beginning of the century, 30*d.* at the end of it.

The German peasant was not helped by this, for he had to work just as many hours a day for his feudal landlord at the end as at the beginning of the century.

This did not lessen the German peasant's services.

The French peasant, so far as he paid in produce, was not helped by it, because the price of his produce had increased as fast as the value of the land, and his rent remained the same burden as before.

Nor the French peasant's rents in produce.

But the English peasant, who in the year 1500 paid 4*d.* an acre fixed rent for his land, which was then worth about 4*d.* an acre in the market, found himself in 1600, if he still held on to his land, still paying only 4*d.* an acre, while his land was worth in the market six, seven, or eight times as much as that. His burden of rent was reduced to ⅙th or ⅛th of what it used to be.

But it reduced the burden of the English peasants' rents in money to ⅙th or ⅛th of the value of their land. This would have made them peasant proprietors had they held on to their land. But their tendency was to leave their land and become labourers for wages.

Had the English peasantry held on to their land as the German and French peasants did, they would thus have grown into peasant proprietors, paying very small nominal rents for their land. But other economic causes were at work, tending to loosen them from their little holdings and make them labourers for wages. The growth of commerce and manufactures attracted them to the towns, the large farms of men with capital more and more took the place of the little peasant holdings, and thus began the present state of things in which England differs so much from other countries.

There were perhaps, in the year 1500, about half a million families in England living by the land, and most were, or had been, farming some little bit of land for themselves. Perhaps there were not so many as a quarter of a million families earning their living by trade or manufactures in the towns, and most of them owning their own workshops or looms.

Change from peasant proprietorship of land or of looms to labour for wages,

The half million agricultural families have now grown into about a million. These no longer are occupiers of land, but are mostly working for wages for a few hundred thousand farmers. But in the meantime the two or three hundred thousand families living by trade and manufactures have increased to 3,000,000, and these again, as a general rule, like their agricultural brethren, have become workers for wages, and no longer are owners of their own workshops and looms.

We probably owe this to the growth of capital and commercial enterprise, stimulated by the increased profit which comes from division of labour, and doing things on a large scale by machinery rather than on a small scale as of old by hand labour. But what we have to mark here is that the beginnings of these great changes were already at work in the era of which we have been speaking, and that in their course the last remains of the old feudal system have been demolished in England. We only see in England now traces of a sort of mock-feudalism in the deer forests and game preserves, and antiquated forms and customs still clinging to the laws of land tenure. These things are survivals of a system which once had life, but which belonged to the old order of things. In the 16th century it was already fast dying out

chiefly the result of the growth of commerce and capital, and the use of machinery.

These changes had begun in the 16th century, and they completed the silent downfall of the feudal system in England.

to make way for commercial enterprise and all that belongs to the new order of things—an order of things which has multiplied by six or seven the population of England, and peopled with about an equal additional number of Englishmen those great colonies for which the maritime enterprise of the 16th century first opened the way.

CONCLUSION.

In the introductory chapter we said that the passage from the old decaying form of civilization to the new, better, and stronger one, involved a change which must needs take place slowly and by degrees; but that in the era under review was to be the *crisis* of the change—the final struggle between the two forces.

We have now traced the main lines of the history of this crisis, and tried to point out its connexion with the future as well as with the past. We have seen that the Protestant revolution was but one wave of the advancing tide of modern civilization. It was a great *revolutionary* wave, the onward swell of which, beginning with the refusal of reform at the Diet of Worms, produced the Peasants' War and the Sack of Rome, swept on through the revolt of the Netherlands, the Thirty Years' War, the Puritan Revolution in England under Oliver Cromwell, the formation of the great independent American republic, until it came to a head and broke in all the terrors of the French Revolution.

The Protestant revolution was the beginning of a great revolutionary wave which broke in the French Revolution of 1798.

It is impossible not to see in the course of the events of this remarkable period an onward movement as

The movement was inevitable, and might have been peacefully met and aided by timely reforms.

irresistible and certain in its ultimate progress as that of the geological changes which have passed over the physical world.

It is in vain to speculate upon what might have been the result of the concession of broad measures of reform everywhere (as in England) whilst yet there was time; but in view of the bloodshed and misery which, humanly speaking, might have been spared, who can fail to be impressed with the terrible responsibility, in the eye of history, resting upon those by whom in the 16th century, at the time of the crisis, the reform was refused? They were utterly powerless, indeed, to stop the ultimate flow of the tide, but they had the terrible power to turn, what might otherwise have been a steady and peaceful stream, into a turbulent and devastating flood. They had the terrible power, and they used it, to involve their own and ten succeeding generations in the turmoils of revolution.

But the refusal of reform at the time of the crisis involved ten generations in the turmoils of revolution.

NOTES ON BOOKS IN ENGLISH RELATING TO THE REFORMATION.

THE term "Reformation" is used by historical writers in two meanings. It quite frequently denotes the religious movement, which began under the auspices of Luther, Calvin, Cranmer and other leaders, and involved an emancipation from the rule of the Papacy, and an important change in the interpretation of the Gospel, as well as in the rites of Christian worship. The Reformation, as thus regarded, is an exclusively religious and ecclesiastical revolution. As such, it forms a portion of the history of Christianity and the Church. At the same time, Protestantism, as a religious system, was partly dependent for its origin on circumstances which properly fall within the province of secular history; and the progress of Protestantism, and of the conflict with the Papacy, is inextricably connected with the general course of European affairs. Hence, the general condition of society at the opening of the sixteenth century, the causes other than religious which prepared for the outbreaking of the great Protest against Rome, and the events of political history which link themselves to the religious Reform, must fall under the notice of a historian who takes a comprehensive view of his subject.

But the term "Reformation" is frequently used with more latitude as a convenient designation for the opening era of modern history,—the history of the post-mediæval times. While the religious reform was one leading and defining characteristic of the new era, it was not the sole peculiarity that distinguished it. On the contrary, various and complex elements, appear in the modern as distinguished from the mediæval period. Events like the growth of monarchy, the spread of Commerce, the new birth of Art, the Revival of Learning, are essential features in that form of society which gradually arose, and followed upon the Middle Ages. The historian who undertakes to describe the era as a whole must give its proper place to each of these new elements. He must trace each to its sources, and form an estimate of the reciprocal influence and collective effect of each of these features of society as it emerged from the mediæval condition. But he will, under such a plan, still be obliged to give a central place to the religious movement, both in the centuries which preceded Luther, and in the age contemporaneous with him. The Protestant religion cannot be considered as an incident; it must be treated as a vital, as the most commanding, fact in the new epoch. So that whether the Reformation is taken in the more special sense to which we first adverted, or in the more comprehensive meaning, the same facts come under the survey of the historian. The difference is chiefly in the point of view from which these facts are regarded, which will of course determine their grouping. As regards the mediæval period, secular history and ecclesiastical history are inseparable. Neither can be studied apart from the other. If a division is more possible as relates to the modern era, still even here, one class of phenomena are so closely associated with another, that ecclesiastical history cannot be understood apart from secular, nor can secular history be adequately studied apart from ecclesiastical. The life of nations, as of men, is one.

In the following list of some of the most useful works to be found in English on the Reformation, general literary works, as well as distinctively ecclesiastical writers, are included.

I. *The Period before Luther.* On Wickliffe, the Reforming Councils, and the beginnings of the Revival of Learning, the last two (viith and viiith) volumes of Milman's *Latin Christianity* are valuable. The fifth volume of the same work describes the Waldenses and other sects, of an earlier date. Ullmann's *Reformers before the Reformation* (2 vols., Edinburgh, 1855) gives an excellent account of the theological and religious forerunners of Luther, especially in Germany. Gillett's *Life and Times of John Huss* (2 vols., 1871) is a readable narrative of the career of the Bohemian Reformer. Villari's *Life of Savonarola* is a thorough biography (2 vols., 1873). With it may be read George Eliot's (Mrs. Lewes's) *Romola.* The most recent *Life of Erasmus* is by Drummond (2 vols., 1873). Milman's Article on Erasmus (*Quart. Rev.*, No. ccxi., and in his collected *Essays*) is an elaborate and instructive discussion. Jortin's *Life of Erasmus* is a learned, but at the same time, an interesting biography, abounding in extracts from the writings of Erasmus. Upon Erasmus and his associates, the friends of the New Learning, in England, we have Seebohm's *The Oxford Reformers of 1498* (London, 1869). The literature of the age prior to Luther is described in the work of Hallam, *Introduction to the Lit. of Europe in the 15th, 16th, and 17th centuries* (3 vols., 1855-56).

II. *General Works upon the Reformation.* Robertson's *History of Charles V.* Edited by W. H. Prescott, with supplement on the Cloister Life of the Emperor (3 vols., 1856). Robertson prefixes to his work an Essay on the state of Europe at the accession of Charles. Prescott's *History of the Reign of Ferdinand and Isabella*, exhibits the causes which gave its peculiar tone to Spanish Catholicism, prior to the sixteenth century. Ranke, *History of the Popes of Rome during the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries*. Translated by Sarah Austin, (3 vols., 1867). This is a work of the highest value. Häusser, *The Period of the Reformation*, 1517-1648. Translated from the German by Mrs. G. Sturges (New York, 1874) is a very able series of historical lectures, and is especially valuable for the political side of the history of this period. Guizot's *Lectures on the History of Civilization* contain two chapters on the Reformation and its consequences. D'Aubigné's *History of the Reformation* is a full, detailed narrative, in a vivacious style, by a warm advocate of Protestantism. On the Catholic side is Spaulding's *History of the Reformation* (Baltimore, 1866). Balmes, *Protestantism and Catholicity compared in their effects on Civilization*: translated from the Spanish (1851), is a voluminous polemical book, by a Spanish Priest, in reply to Guizot's Lectures on Civilization. *The Reformation*, by G. P. Fisher, is designed "to present to intelligent and educated readers the means of acquainting themselves" with the Reformation, in its various aspects (1 vol., 1873).

The ivth vol. of Gieseler's *Church History* (in the American Edition) is an extremely learned and satisfactory account of the Reformation; but it is adapted to scholars, and not to the general reader. Hardwick's *History of the Reformation* is likewise intended for scholars and theologians, and is written by a decided adherent of the Church of England. The chapters on the Reformation in Hase's *Church History* are less scholastic, but are still specially adapted to the theological scholar. Waddington's *History of the Reformation*, is a carefully written, impartial narrative, of a more popular character; but it extends only to the death of Luther.

III. *Works upon the Reformation in the several countries.* (*a*) *Germany.* At the head of the list belongs Ranke's *History of Germany in the Period of the Reformation:* translated in part, by Sarah Austin, (3 vols., 1845-47). Michelet's *Life of Luther* (1 vol.), and *Table-Talk of Luther*, are both translated in Bohn's Library. The *Life of Luther* by Barnas Sears (8 vo., 1850), is brief, but founded on an extensive knowledge of the sources.

(*b*) *Switzerland.* Christoffel's *Zwingli, or the Rise of the Reformation in Switzerland*, is one of the latest biographies of the Zurich Reformer. The *Life of Calvin*, by Beza, translated from the Latin by Gibson (Philad., 1836), is one of the original documents relating to the subject. The *Life of Calvin* by Dyer (1849) is accurate and impartial. The most copious and complete of the biographies of Calvin is by Henry, translated from the German by Stebbing (3 vols., 1844). *The Letters of Calvin*, edited by Bonnet, translated in 2 vols. (Edinburgh, 1856-57), are important. There is an English translation of all of Calvin's Writings, in 52 vols. (Edinburgh, 1856-57).

(*c*) *Denmark, Norway, and Sweden.* Dunham, *History* of these countries (in Lardner's Cab. Cycl., 1840). Geijer, *History of Sweden*, translated by Turner (1845).

(*d*) *Bohemia and Moravia. The Reformation and Anti-Reformation in Bohemia* (2 vols., London, 1845.)

(*d*) *Poland.* Krasinski, *History of the Reformation in Poland* (2 vols., London, 1840). By the same Author, *Sketch of the Religious History of the Slavonic Nations* (Edinburgh, 1851).

(*e*) *France.* The chapters, on the Reformation, in Michelet's General History of France, are correct and animated. The *Student's History of France* (1 vol., 8vo., 1862) gives a brief narrative of the Reformation and the Civil Wars. Ranke's *History of France, especially in the 16th and 17th centuries*, is translated in part under the title, *History of Civil Wars and Monarchy in France, London*, 1852. The whole work, like the rest of the series by Ranke on this era, is masterly. Among the other valuable works on the French Reformation, are De Felice, *History of French Protestants*, translated by Lobdell (1851). W. S. Browning, *History of the Huguenots in the 16th century* (3 vols., 1829-39). [Mrs. Marsh], *History of the Huguenots* (2 vols., 1847). Duc D'Aumale, *Lives of the Princes of Conde* (vol. i. and ii., London, 1872). H. White, *The Massacre of St. Bartholomew, preceded by a narrative of the religious wars* (London, 1868). This one of the best of the histories of this period; it gives interesting details.

(*f*) *Netherlands.* Brandt, *History of the Reformation in the Netherlands* (4 vols., 4to.). Engl. translation (London, 1720). Brandt is the learned Arminian historian. His voluminous work is highly prized by scholars. Motley, *Rise of the Dutch Republic*, 3 vols. (New York, 1856). Prescott, *History of Philip II.* (3 vols., 1855.)

(*g*) *England.* The works of the English Reformers have been published by the Parker Society, in 54 vols., with a general index. The general histories of England treat of the Reformation; as Macaulay (in his Introductory Chapter)—also, in his reviews of Ranke, and Hallam; Hume Lingard, from the Roman Catholic point of view; Froude, etc. Hallam's *Constitutional History* is an authority of the first rank on all legal and constitutional questions connected with the rise and progress of Protestantism in England, and is instructive on collateral points. Burnet's *History of the Reformation*, is the work of an honest writer, with extraordinary means of knowledge, but sometimes swayed by prejudice. The biographical and historical writings of Strype are of great value to the student who wishes to make a thorough study of the English Reformation. Massingberd's *History of the English Reformation* has passed through many editions. It is concise. J. H. Blunt, in his *History of the Reformation to the death of Wolsey*, 1514-47 (London, 1872) represents the conservative, or High Church opinions. He bestows much praise upon Wolsey and his ideas of Reform. Neal's *History of the Puritans from the Reformation to the death of Queen Elizabeth*, is a learned account of the Reformation from the Puritan standing-point. Bacon's *Genesis of the New England Churches* is a narrative of the rise of Independency, and of the migration of the Pilgrims to Plymouth.

(*h*) *Scotland.* The *History of the Reformation*, by John Knox himself, is one of the principal sources of information. Robertson, *History of Scotland during the reigns of Mary and James VI.*, etc. McCrie's *Life of John Knox* is highly instructive. Burton, *History of Scotland to* 1688. This is the most recent, and probably the best of the histories of Scotland. It is full upon the Reformation.

(*i*) *Italy.* McCrie's *History of the Reformation in Italy*, is a standard work. M. Young's *Life of Paleario* (2 vols., 1860) throws light upon the history of Italian Protestantism.

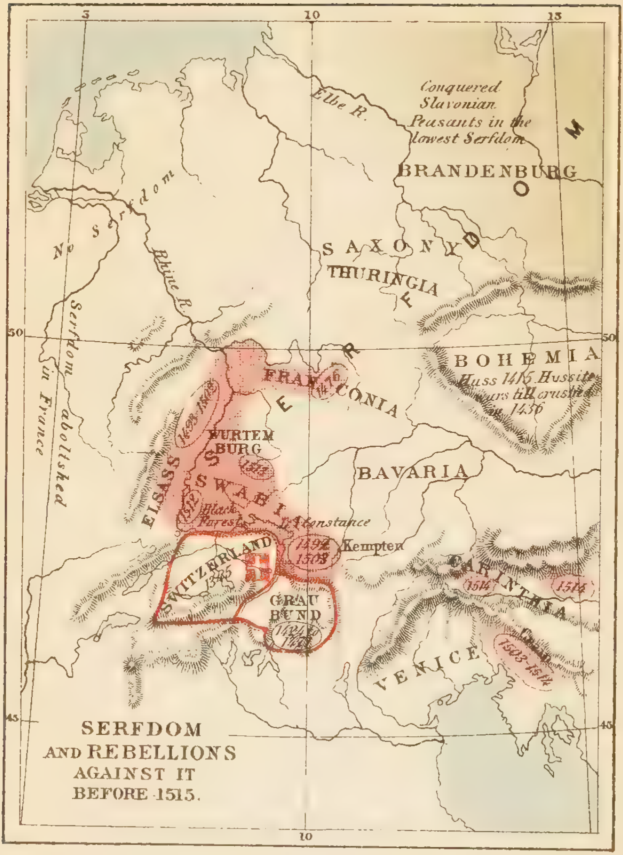
(*j*) *Spain.* McCrie's *History of the Reformation in Spain* is the best work on the subject. Prescott's *His-*

tory of Philip II. Ticknor's *History of Spanish Literature*, and Llorente's *History of the Inquisition in Spain*, may be consulted with profit.

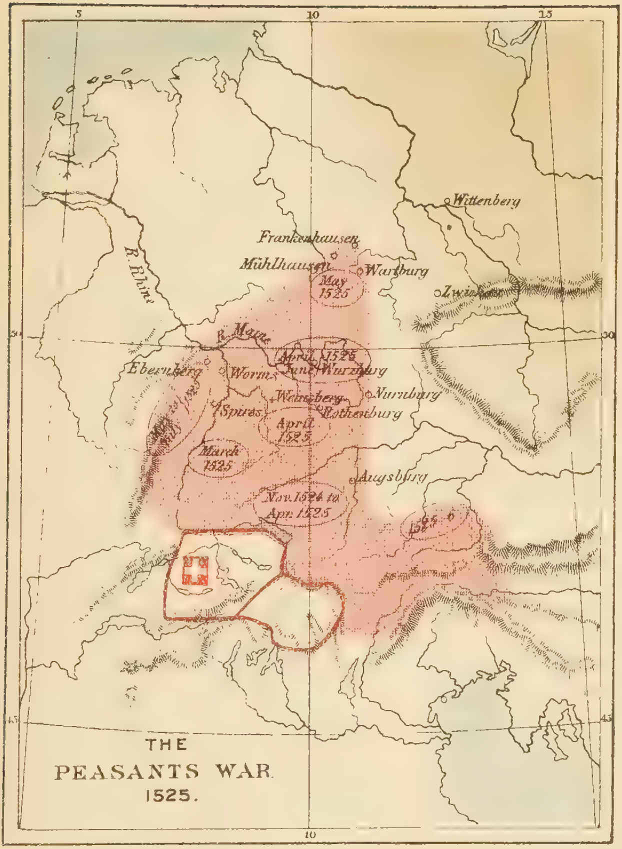
In addition to the foregoing titles, may be mentioned Sarpi's *History of the Council of Trent*, Ranke's *History of the Popes*, Hübner's *Life of Pope Sixtus V.*, Steinmetz's *History of the Jesuits*, Isaac Taylor, *Loyola and Jesuitism iu its Rudiments*. These works bear on the rise and progress of the Catholic Reaction.

PUBLISHER'S NOTE.

A full list of "Works in general history relating to the Period of the Reformation," giving the titles in full, will be found in the *History of the Reformation* by Prof. Fisher. Those who may desire to pursue the study of this Era in any particular direction beyond the limits indicated above, will find all necessary aid in the list named.


3
10
15
Elbe R.
Conquered Slavonian Peasants in the lowest Serfdom
BRANDENBURG
No Serfdom
Rhine R.
SAXONY
THURINGIA
SERFDOM
Serfdom abolished in France
50
BOHEMIA
Huss 1415 Hussite wars till crushed in 1436
FRANCONIA
1476
1493-1502
WURTEMBURG
1514
ELSASS
SWABIA
1512
Black Forest
L. Constance
BAVARIA
1492 1503
Kempten
SWITZERLAND
1315
GRAU BUND
1424 to 1471
CARINTHIA
1514
1514
1503-1514
VENICE
45
10

SERFDOM
AND REBELLIONS
AGAINST IT
BEFORE 1515.



THE
PEASANTS WAR
1525.

5
10
15
Wittenberg
Frankenhausen
Mühlhausen
Wartburg
May 1525
Zwickau
R. Rhine
R. Maine
50
April 1525
June
Wurzburg
Ebernburg
Worms
Nurnburg
Weinsberg
Spires
Rothenburg
April 1525
March 1525
Augsburg
Nov. 1524 to Apr. 1525
1525-6
45
10

INDEX.

ADRIAN VI., 154, 155, 179, 206
Aleander, Papal nuncio, 105, 109, 118, 130
Alexander VI., 24, 26, 37, 73, 78, 205
Alsace, *see* Elsass
Alva, Duke of, 200
America, discovery of, 4
Anne of Cleves, 194
Armada, the Spanish, 200, 215
Arthur, Prince of Wales, 54, 173
Astrology, 229
Augsburg confession, 169
Augsburg, peace of, 171
Augustine, St., theology of, 98, 99, 106

BAMBERG, bishop of, 230
Bavaria, rising of peasants in, 149
Berlichingen, *see* Gotz v
Berne revolts from Rome, 165
Bible, English version of, 185, 192, 221; German, 135, 221; French, 221
Boheim, Hans, 62
Boleyn, Anne, 180, 184; marriage of, 184; beheaded, 193
Borgia, Cæsar, 24, 26, 73, 75
Bosworth, battle of, 52
Bourbon, Duke of, 155, 157, 179
Buckingham, execution of, 176
Bundschuh, the, 63, 115, 117, 128, 138, 144

CABOT, Sebastian, 4, 56
Calvin, John, 202, 205; influence of writings of, 221
Cambray, league of, 131
Campeggio, 180
Capets, dynasty of the, 42
Cappel, peace of, 165
Caraffa, cardinal, 212
Carinthia, rising of the peasantry in, 149, 151
Carlstadt, 136, 137, 141, 142, 145, 146
Casimir, Markgraf, 146, 148
Catherine of Arragon, 54, 90, 132, 173 174, 175, 176, 180; death of, 193.
Catherine de Medici, 217
Celibacy of the clergy, influence of, 223
Charles V., 30, 39, 103, 113–135, 154, 155, 166–171, 175, 179, 180, 195, 196, 200, 213
Charles VIII. of France, 26, 37, 46, 73
Christian II., 199
Christian Prince, of Erasmus, 93, 100
Civilization, character of modern, 5
Clement VII., 155, 160, 179, 206
Colet, John, 78–97, 101, 183, 190, 222 229
Columbus, 4, 37, 41, 56
Commerce, 3, 18, 21, 233-237
Contarini, Gasper, 207, 208
Contarini, the younger, 212
Copernicus, Nicolas, 232
Cranach, Lucas, 119, 120
Crammer, 184, 193, 197
Criminal law, cruelty of, 230
Cromwell, Oliver, 204
Cromwell, Thomas, 191–193
Crusades, the influence of, 3, 17

DANTE, 23
Denmark, revolt of, from Rome, 199–200

Diets, German, 30 (*see* Worms, Spires, Ratisbon)
Dudley (minister of Henry VII.) 82-84

EDWARD VI., 194
Elizabeth, princess (afterwards queen), 193
Elsass, rising of peasants in, 63, 149
Empson (minister of Henry VII.), 83, 84
England under Henry VII., 48-57 76–84; under Henry VIII., 84–92 132–133, 155–156, 171–198
Erasmus, 81–85, 93, 100, 101, 103, 104, 110, 113, 134, 153, 177–178, 190, 207, 226, 229

FERDINAND and Isabella, 4, 27, 36, 37, 88–91, 104, 174
Ferdinand I. of Austria, 170
Feudal system, 16, 20, 29, 31, 233–237 (*see* Serfdom)
Ficino, 70, 75, 77, 229
Field of the cloth of gold, 133
Fisher, Bishop, sent to the Tower, 187, 207
Flodden, battle of, 90
Florence, 26, 68–76
Forest cantons of Switzerland, 165
France, 41–48, 88–92, 132–135, 154–157, 169–196, 216-217
Francis I., 28, 91, 101, 103, 132, 133, 154–157, 208, 216
Franconia, rebellion of peasants in, 62, 145
Franz von Sickingen, 31, 113–115, 118, 128, 129, 138-140
Frederic of Saxony, 101, 102-135, 138
Frundsberg, General, 125, 151, 155, 157

GALILEO, 233
Genevan reformers, the, 201–214
Germany 27–35, 59–68, 97–154, 166–171, 220
Geyer, Florian, 143, 148
Gold mines of new world, effect of discovery of, 234
Gonsalve de Cordova, 27
Götz von Berlichingen, 31, 113, 149
Granada, conquest of, 4, 36
Graubund, the, 63
Grocyn, 81
Grotius, Hugo, 220
Guicciardini, 24
Gustavus Adolphus, 199
Gustavus Vasa, 199

HANSE Towns, 18, 32
Helfenstein, Count von, 143, 145
Henry VII., 52–57, 83–84, 173–174
Henry VIII., 27, 28, 44, 82-92, 100-104, 132–133, 154 172-199, 220
Heresy, 185-186, 225
Hermann, 162
Hesse, Philip of, 170
Hipler, Wendel, 143
Holy Alliance, the, 88
Howard, Admiral, 90
Howard, Catherine, 195
Huguenots, the, 204–205, 217
Humanists 71, 77, 206
Huss, John, 14, 62, 106, 119, 123, 127
Hutten, Ulrich von, 113-115, 118–123, 128–130, 138–140

INDULGENCES, sale of, 100–103
Infanta of Portugal, 133, 156, 180
Innocent VIII., 73
'Inquisition,' the, 39, 213, 215
Italian reformers, 201–208
Italy, 12–27 (*see* Rome and Popes)

JEROME of Prague, 14
Jesuits, order of, 208–212, 222
Johanna of Castile, 38
Joss Fritz, 64–65, 117, 137–138
Julius II., 27, 88–89, 174

KEMPTEN, peasants' rebellion in, 63
Kepler, 233
Knox, John, 204–205, 222

LAMBERT SIMNEL, 53
Leo X., 27, 89, 100–154, 170 206
Lilly, 84, 87
Linacre, 81
Lollards, 15, 88, 178
Louis XI. of France, 43
Louis XII., 27, 88, 91
Loyola, Ignatius, 208–212
Luther, Martin, 97–125, 152, 166, 167-170, 177, 208, 221, 229, 230

MACHIAVELLI, 19, 22, 25, 43, 46, 75, 163
Magellan, 227
Marignano, battle of, 91, 132
Mary, princess, afterwards queen, 133, 156, 175, 176, 179, 196, 200
Maximilian, emperor, 19, 29, 38, 64, 89, 103
Medici, Cosmo de', 69, 70
Medici, Lorenzo de', 69, 70, 72, 155
Medici, Catherine de', 217
Melanchthon, Philip, 103, 109–111, 121, 136, 168–169, 208, 230
Michael Angelo, 69
Milan 26, 42, 132, 154
Mohammedan power, the, 2, 4, 35, 168, 169
Monasteries, dissolution of, 191-192
Moors, in Spain, 2, 4, 35
More, Sir Thomas, 82–97, 172, 176–178, 186–190, 226, 229
Morgarten, battle of, 61
Morton, Cardinal, 55, 183, 205
Münzer, 136, 141, 142, 150

NANTES, edict of, 217
Naples, 26, 42, 132
Netherlands, revolt of from Rome, 200, 201
New Testament of Erasmus, 94, 185, 190; of Tindal, *see* Tindal

OXFORD Reformers, 76–97, 176 177, 190, 225, (*see* Colet, Erasmus, More)

PARR, Queen Catherine, 195
Pavia, battle of, 155, 179
Paul III., 207, 208, 213
Paul IV., 213
Peasants' war, 140, 152, 177
Peasantry, condition of in England, 50, 233–237; in France, 45 and 235, 237; in Germany, *see* Serfdom
Perkin Warbeck, 53
Petrarch, 23
Philip de Commines, 45
Philip II. of Spain, 38, 170, 196, 201 214
Pico della Mirandola, 70, 9 72, 229
Pilgrimage of Grace, 193
Pilgrim fathers, 222, 204–205
Pole, Reginald, 194, 206, 212
Politian, 70
Popes of Rome, 24–27, 206, and *see* Innocent VIII., Alexander VI., Julius II., Leo X., Adrian VI., Paul III., Paul IV.
'Praise of Folly' of Erasmus, 85, 101, 113, 191
'Prince, The,' of Machiavelli, 76
Printing, invention of, 4
Protestants, origin of name of, 168
Puritans, the, 204, 217, 226

RATISBON, Diet of, 169, 208
Revival of learning, 3, 68, 78
Revolts from Rome—in England, 171–198
—in Germany, 166-170
—in Switzerland. 163–166
—in Denmark and Sweden, 199
—in the Netherlands, 200
Richard III., 52–53
Rohrbach, little Jack, 144
Roman Catholic Church, 8
Roman civilization, 6
Rome, 8, 22–27; sack of, 154–156
Roper, Margaret, 187
Rothenburg, peasants' war at, 146–149

SICKINGEN, *see* Franz
St. Bartholomew, massacre of, 217
St. Paul's school, founded by Colet, 86
Savonarola Girolamo, 72–75, 78, 121, 222
Saxony, John of, 167, 169
Schmalkalden, league of, 169, 170
Scientific inquiry, beginnings of, 23
Scientific knowledge, 227
Scholastic system, the, 12–16, 77
Serfdom in Germany, 20, 33-4, 58-66 140-153, 231
Serfdom in France, 20, 45-47, 234
Serfdom in England, 20, 234-236
Servetus, 203, 226
Slavery and slave trade, 41
Spain, 35–41, 214–215, and *see* Charles V.
Spalatin, 109, 110, 115, 122, 123
Spires, Diets of, 156, 157, 167-168
Spurs, battle of the, 90
Storch, Claus, 136, 137, 142
Swabia, insurrection of peasants in, 141–143
Swabian league, the, 66, 141–143
Sweden, revolt from Rome of, 199–201
Switzerland, 61, 163

TETZEL, 202
Thirty Years' War, 167, 171, 200, 216
Thuringia, insurrection of peasants in, 150
Tindall, William, 185, 193, 222
Trent, Council of, 208, 212–214
Truchsess, George, 143, 145, 151
Tycho Brahe, 233
Tyrol, rising of peasants in the, 151–152

ULRICH VON HUTTEN, *see* Hutten
Ulrich, D., of Würtemberg, 66
United Provinces, the, 201
Universe, ideas of the, 228
Universities, 14
Universities of England visited and reformed, 192
Utopia, More's, 94, 96, 100, 172, 185 226

VALDEZ, JUAN DE, 60. 157, 206
Valdez, Alphonse de, secretary of Charles V., 131
Vasco de Gama, 4
Venice, 25
Vienna besieged by the Turks, 168

WARTBURG, castle of the, 130, 136
Weinsburg, the piper of, 143–146
Wiclif, 14, 62, 106
Witchcraft, belief in, 230
Wittenberg Reformers (*see* Luther and Melanchthon)
Wolsey, 89, 92, 154, 155, 178–184, 197, 205
Worms, Diet of, 115–135, 156, 167, 169, 170, 172

XAVIER, FRANCIS, 210
Ximenes, cardinal, 39, 154, 205

ZURICH revolts from Rome, 165
Zwickau, prophets of, 136–137
Zwingle, Ulrich, 164–165, 202

"*The volumes contain the ripe results of the studies of men who are authorities in their respective fields.*"—THE NATION.

EPOCHS OF HISTORY

EPOCHS OF ANCIENT HISTORY	EPOCHS OF MODERN HISTORY
Eleven volumes, 16mo, each $1.00.	Eighteen volumes, 16mo, each $1.00.

The Epoch volumes have most successfully borne the test of experience, and are universally acknowledged to be the best series of historical manuals in existence. They are admirably adapted in form and matter to the needs of colleges, schools, reading circles, and private classes. Attention is called to them as giving the utmost satisfaction as class hand-books.

NOAH PORTER, *President of Yale College.*

"The 'Epochs of History' have been prepared with knowledge and artistic skill to meet the wants of a large number of readers. To the young they furnish an outline or compendium. To those who are older they present a convenient sketch of the heads of the knowledge which they have already acquired. The outlines are by no means destitute of spirit, and may be used with great profit for family reading, and in select classes or reading clubs."

CHARLES KENDALL ADAMS, *President of Cornell University.*

"A series of concise and carefully prepared volumes on special eras of history. Each is also complete in itself, and has no especial connection with the other members of the series. The works are all written by authors selected by the editor on account of some especial qualifications for a portrayal of the period they respectively describe. The volumes form an excellent collection, especially adapted to the wants of a general reader."

The Publishers will supply these volumes to teachers at SPECIAL NET RATES, and would solicit correspondence concerning terms for examination and introduction copies.

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS, Publishers

153-157 Fifth Avenue, New York.

THE GREAT SUCCESS OF THE SERIES

is the best proof of its general popularity, and the excellence of the various volumes is further attested by their having been adopted as text-books in many of our leading educational institutions. The publishers beg to call attention to the following list comprising some of the most prominent institutions using volumes of the series:

Smith College, Northampton, Mass.
Univ. of Vermont, Burlington, Vt.
Yale Univ., New Haven, Conn.
Harvard Univ., Cambridge, Mass.
Bellewood Sem., Anchorage, Ky.
Vanderbilt Univ., Nashville, Tenn.
State Univ., Minneapolis, Minn.
Christian Coll., Columbia, Mo.
Adelphi Acad., Brooklyn, N. Y.
Earlham Coll., Richmond, Ind.
Granger Place School, Canandaigua, N. Y.
Salt Lake Acad., Salt Lake City, Utah.
Beloit Col., Beloit, Wis.
Logan Female Coll., Russellville, Ky.
No. West Univ., Evanston, Ill.
State Normal School, Baltimore, Md.
Hamilton Coll., Clinton, N. Y.
Doane Coll., Crete, Neb.
Princeton College, Princeton, N. J.
Williams Coll., Williamstown, Mass.
Cornell Univ., Ithaca, N. Y.
Illinois Coll., Jacksonville, Ill.
Univ. of South, Sewaunee, Tenn.
Wesleyan Univ., Mt. Pleasant, Ia.
Univ. of Cal., Berkeley, Cal.
So. Car. Coll., Columbia, S. C.
Amsterdam Acad., Amsterdam, N. Y.
Carleton Coll., Northfield, Minn.
Wesleyan Univ., Middletown, Mass.
Albion Coll., Albion, Mich.
Dartmouth Coll., Hanover, N. H.
Wilmington Coll., Wilmington, O.
Madison Univ., Hamilton, N. Y.
Syracuse Univ., Syracuse, N. Y.
Univ. of Wis., Madison, Wis.
Union Coll., Schenectady, N. Y.
Norwich Free Acad., Norwich, Conn.
Greenwich Acad., Greenwich, Conn.
Univ. of Neb., Lincoln, Neb.
Kalamazoo Coll., Kalamazoo, Mich.
Olivet Coll., Olivet, Mich.
Amherst Coll., Amherst, Mass.
Ohio State Univ., Columbus, O.
Free Schools, Oswego, N. Y.

Bishop J. F. HURST, *ex-President of Drew Theol. Sem.*

"It appears to me that the idea of Morris in his Epochs is strictly in harmony with the philosophy of history—namely, that great movements should be treated not according to narrow geographical and national limits and distinction, but universally, according to their place in the general life of the world. The historical Maps and the copious Indices are welcome additions to the volumes."

EPOCHS OF ANCIENT HISTORY.

A SERIES OF BOOKS NARRATING THE HISTORY OF GREECE AND ROME, AND OF THEIR RELATIONS TO OTHER COUNTRIES AT SUCCESSIVE EPOCHS.

Edited by

Rev. G. W. Cox and Charles Sankey, M.A.

Eleven volumes, 16mo, with 41 Maps and Plans, Sold separately. Price per vol., $1.00. The Set, Roxburgh style, gilt top, in box, $11.00.

TROY—ITS LEGEND, HISTORY, AND LITERATURE. By S. G. W. Benjamin.

“ The task of the author has been to gather into a clear and very readable narrative all that is known of legendary, historical, and geographical Troy, and to tell the story of Homer, and weigh and compare the different theories in the Homeric controversy. The work is well done. His book is altogether candid, and is a very valuable and entertaining compendium.”—*Hartford Courant.*

“As a monograph on Troy, covering all sides of the question, it is of great value, and supplies a long vacant place in our fund of classical knowledge.”—*N. Y. Christian Advocate.*

THE GREEKS AND THE PERSIANS. By Rev G. W. Cox.

“ It covers the ground in a perfectly satisfactory way. The work is clear, succinct, and readable.”—*New York Independent.*

‘ Marked by thorough and comprehensive scholarship and by a skillful style.”—*Congregationalist.*

“ It would be hard to find a more creditable book. The author's prefatory remarks upon the origin and growth of Greek civilization are alone worth the price of the volume ' —*Christian Union*

THE ATHENIAN EMPIRE—From the Flight of Xerxes to the Fall of Athens. By Rev. G. W. Cox.

"Mr. Cox writes in such a way as to bring before the reader everything which is important to be known or learned; and his narrative cannot fail to give a good idea of the men and deeds with which he is concerned."—*The Churchman.*

"Mr. Cox has done his work with the honesty of a true student. It shows persevering scholarship and a desire to get at the truth."—*New York Herald.*

THE SPARTAN AND THEBAN SUPREMACIES. By Charles Sankey, M.A.

"This volume covers the period between the disasters of Athens at the close of the Pelopenesian war and the rise of Macedon. It is a very striking and instructive picture of the political life of the Grecian commonwealth at that time."—*The Churchman.*

"It is singularly interesting to read, and in respect to arrangement, maps, etc., is all that can be desired."—*Boston Congregationalist.*

THE MACEDONIAN EMPIRE—Its Rise and Culmination to Death of Alexander the Great. By A. M. Curteis, M.A.

"A good and satisfactory history of a very important period. The maps are excellent, and the story is lucidly and vigorously told."—*The Nation.*

"The same compressive style and yet completeness of detail that have characterized the previous issues in this delightful series, are found in this volume. Certainly the art of conciseness in writing was never carried to a higher or more effective point."—*Boston Saturday Evening Gazette.*

⁂ *The above five volumes give a connected and complete history of Greece from the earliest times to the death of Alexander.*

EARLY ROME—From the Foundation of the City to its Destruction by the Gauls. By W. IHNE, Ph.D.

"Those who want to know the truth instead of the traditions that used to be learned of our fathers, will find in the work entertainment, careful scholarship, and sound sense."—*Cincinnati Times.*

"The book is excellently well done. The views are those of a learned and able man, and they are presented in this volume with great force and clearness."—*The Nation.*

ROME AND CARTHAGE—The Punic Wars. By R. BOSWORTH SMITH.

"By blending the account of Rome and Carthage the accomplished author presents a succinct and vivid picture of two great cities and people which leaves a deep impression. The story is full of intrinsic interest, and was never better told."—*Christian Union.*

"The volume is one of rare interest and value."—*Chicago Interior.*

"An admirably condensed history of Carthage, from its establishment by the adventurous Phœnician traders to its sad and disastrous fall."—*New York Herald.*

THE GRACCHI, MARIUS, AND SULLA. By A. H. BEESLEY.

"A concise and scholarly historical sketch, descriptive of the decay of the Roman Republic, and the events which paved the way for the advent of the conquering Cæsar. It is an excellent account of the leaders and legislation of the republic."—*Boston Post.*

"It is prepared in succinct but comprehensive style, and is an excellent book for reading and reference."—*New York Observer.*

"No better condensed account of the two Gracchi and the turbulent careers of Marius and Sulla has yet appeared."—*New York Independent.*

THE ROMAN TRIUMVIRATES. By the Very Rev. CHARLES MERIVALE, D.D.

"In brevity, clear and scholarly treatment of the subject, and the convenience of map, index, and side notes, the volume is a model."—*New York Tribune.*

"An admirable presentation, and in style vigorous and picturesque."—*Hartford Courant.*

THE EARLY EMPIRE—From the Assassination of Julius Cæsar to the Assassination of Domitian. By Rev. W. WOLFE CAPES, M.A.

"It is written with great clearness and simplicity of style, and is as attractive an account as has ever been given in brief of one of the most interesting periods of Roman History."—*Boston Saturday Evening Gazette.*

"It is a clear, well-proportioned, and trustworthy performance, and well deserves to be studied."—*Christian at Work.*

THE AGE OF THE ANTONINES—The Roman Empire of the Second Century. By Rev. W. WOLFE CAPES, M.A.

"The Roman Empire during the second century is the broad subject discussed in this book, and discussed with learning and intelligence."—*New York Independent.*

"The writer's diction is clear and elegant, and his narration is free from any touch of pedantry. In the treatment of its prolific and interesting theme, and in its general plan, the book is a model of works of its class."—*New York Herald.*

"We are glad to commend it. It is written clearly, and with care and accuracy. It is also in such neat and compact form as to be the more attractive."—*Congregationalist.*

⁂ *The above six volumes give the History of Rome from the founding of the City to the death of Marcus Aurelius Antoninus.*

EPOCHS OF MODERN HISTORY.

A SERIES OF BOOKS NARRATING THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND AND EUROPE AT SUCCESSIVE EPOCHS SUBSEQUENT TO THE CHRISTIAN ERA.

Edited by

EDWARD E. MORRIS.

Eighteen volumes, 16mo, with 74 Maps, Plans, and Tables.
Sold separately. Price per vol., $1.00.
The Set, Roxburgh style, gilt top, in box, $18.00.

THE BEGINNING OF THE MIDDLE AGES—England and Europe in the Ninth Century.

By the Very Rev. R. W. CHURCH, M.A.

"A remarkably thoughtful and satisfactory discussion of the causes and results of the vast changes which came upon Europe during the period discussed. The book is adapted to be exceedingly serviceable."—*Chicago Standard.*

"At once readable and valuable. It is comprehensive and yet gives the details of a period most interesting to the student of history."—*Herald and Presbyter.*

"It is written with a clearness and vividness of statement which make it the pleasantest reading. It represents a great deal of patient research, and is careful and scholarly."—*Boston Journal.*

THE NORMANS IN EUROPE—The Feudal System and England under the Norman Kings.

By Rev. A. H. JOHNSON, M.A.

"Its pictures of the Normans in their home, of the Scandinavian exodus, the conquest of England, and Norman administration, are full of vigor and cannot fail of holding the reader's attention."—*Episcopal Register.*

"The style of the author is vigorous and animated, and he has given a valuable sketch of the origin and progress of the great Northern movement that has shaped the history of modern Europe."—*Boston Transcript.*

THE CRUSADES. By Rev. G. W. Cox.

"To be warmly commended for important qualities. The author shows conscientious fidelity to the materials, and such skill in the use of them, that, as a result, the reader has before him a narrative related in a style that makes it truly fascinating."—*Congregationalist.*

"It is written in a pure and flowing style, and its arrangement and treatment of subject are exceptional."—*Christian Intelligencer.*

THE EARLY PLANTAGENETS—Their Relation to the History of Europe; The Foundation and Growth of Constitutional Government. By Rev. W. Stubbs, M.A.

"Nothing could be desired more clear, succinct, and well arranged. All parts of the book are well done. It may be pronounced the best existing brief history of the constitution for this, its most important period."—*The Nation.*

"Prof. Stubbs has presented leading events with such fairness and wisdom as are seldom found. He is remarkably clear and satisfactory."—*The Churchman.*

EDWARD III. By Rev. W. Warburton, M.A.

"The author has done his work well, and we commend it as containing in small space all essential matter."—*New York Independent.*

"Events and movements are admirably condensed by the author, and presented in such attractive form as to entertain as well as instruct."—*Chicago Interior.*

THE HOUSES OF LANCASTER AND YORK—The Conquest and Loss of France. By James Gairdner.

"Prepared in a most careful and thorough manner, and ought to be read by every student."—*New York Times.*

"It leaves nothing to be desired as regards compactness, accuracy, and excellence of literary execution."—*Boston Journal.*

THE ERA OF THE PROTESTANT REVOLUTION.

By FREDERIC SEEBOHM. With Notes, on Books in English relating to the Reformation, by Prof. GEORGE P. FISHER, D.D.

"For an impartial record of the civil and ecclesiastical changes about four hundred years ago, we cannot commend a better manual."—*Sunday-School Times.*

"All that could be desired, as well in execution as in plan. The narrative is animated, and the selection and grouping of events skillful and effective."—*The Nation.*

THE EARLY TUDORS—Henry VII., Henry VIII.

By Rev. C. E. MOBERLEY, M.A., late Master in Rugby School.

"Is concise, scholarly, and accurate. On the epoch of which it treats, we know of no work which equals it."—*N. Y. Observer.*

"A marvel of clear and succinct brevity and good historical judgment. There is hardly a better book of its kind to be named."—*New York Independent.*

THE AGE OF ELIZABETH.

By Rev. M. CREIGHTON, M.A.

"Clear and compact in style; careful in their facts, and just in interpretation of them. It sheds much light on the progress of the Reformation and the origin of the Popish reaction during Queen Elizabeth's reign; also, the relation of Jesuitism to the latter."—*Presbyterian Review.*

"A clear, concise, and just story of an era crowded with events of interest and importance."—*New York World.*

THE THIRTY YEARS' WAR—1618-1648.

By SAMUEL RAWSON GARDINER.

"As a manual it will prove of the greatest practical value, while to the general reader it will afford a clear and interesting account of events. We know of no more spirited and attractive recital of the great era."—*Boston Saturday Evening Gazette.*

"The thrilling story of those times has never been told so vividly or succinctly as in this volume."—*Episcopal Register.*

THE PURITAN REVOLUTION; and the First Two Stuarts, 1603-1660. By SAMUEL RAWSON GARDINER.

"The narrative is condensed and brief, yet sufficiently comprehensive to give an adequate view of the events related." —*Chicago Standard.*

"Mr. Gardiner uses his researches in an admirably clear and fair way"—*Congregationalist.*

"The sketch is concise, but clear and perfectly intelligible." —*Hartford Courant.*

THE ENGLISH RESTORATION AND LOUIS XIV., from the Peace of Westphalia to the Peace of Nimwegen. By OSMUND AIRY, M.A.

"It is crisply and admirably written. An immense amount of information is conveyed and with great clearness, the arrangement of the subjects showing great skill and a thorough command of the cŏmplicated theme."—*Boston Saturday Evening Gazette.*

"The author writes with fairness and discrimination, and has given a clear and intelligible presentation of the time."—*New York Evangelist.*

THE FALL OF THE STUARTS; and Western Europe. By Rev. EDWARD HALE, M.A.

"A valuable compend to the general reader and scholar." —*Providence Journal.*

"It will be found of great value. It is a very graphic account of the history of Europe during the 17th century, and is admirably adapted for the use of students."—*Boston Saturday Evening Gazette.*

"An admirable handbook for the student."—*The Churchman.*

THE AGE OF ANNE. By EDWARD E. MORRIS, M.A.

"The author's arrangement of the material is remarkably clear, his selection and adjustment of the facts judicious, his historical judgment fair and candid, while the style wins by its simple elegance."—*Chicago Standard.*

"An excellent compendium of the history of an important period."—*The Watchman.*

THE EARLY HANOVERIANS—Europe from the Peace of Utrecht to the Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle. By EDWARD E. MORRIS, M.A.

"Masterly, condensed, and vigorous, this is one of the books which it is a delight to read at odd moments; which are broad and suggestive, and at the same time condensed in treatment."—*Christian Advocate.*

"A remarkably clear and readable summary of the salient points of interest. The maps and tables, no less than the author's style and treatment of the subject, entitle the volume to the highest claims of recognition."—*Boston Daily Advertiser.*

FREDERICK THE GREAT, AND THE SEVEN YEARS' WAR. By F. W. LONGMAN.

"The subject is most important, and the author has treated it in a way which is both scholarly and entertaining."—*The Churchman.*

"Admirably adapted to interest school boys, and older heads will find it pleasant reading."—*New York Tribune.*

THE FRENCH REVOLUTION, AND FIRST EMPIRE. By WILLIAM O'CONNOR MORRIS. With Appendix by ANDREW D. WHITE, LL.D., ex-President of Cornell University.

"We have long needed a simple compendium of this period, and we have here one which is brief enough to be easily run through with, and yet particular enough to make entertaining reading."—*New York Evening Post.*

"The author has well accomplished his difficult task of sketching in miniature the grand and crowded drama of the French Revolution and the Napoleonic Empire, showing himself to be no servile compiler, but capable of judicious and independent criticism."—*Springfield Republican.*

THE EPOCH OF REFORM—1830-1850. By JUSTIN MCCARTHY.

"Mr. McCarthy knows the period of which he writes thoroughly, and the result is a narrative that is at once entertaining and trustworthy."—*New York Examiner.*

"The narrative is clear and comprehensive, and told with abundant knowledge and grasp of the subject."—*Boston Courier.*

IMPORTANT HISTORICAL WORKS.

CIVILIZATION DURING THE MIDDLE AGES.

Especially in its Relation to Modern Civilization. By GEORGE B. ADAMS, Professor of History in Yale University. 8vo, $2.50.

Professor Adams has here supplied the need of a text-book for the study of Mediæval History in college classes at once thorough and yet capable of being handled in the time usually allowed to it. He has aimed to treat the subject in a manner which its place in the college curriculum demands, by presenting as clear a view as possible of the underlying and organic growth of our civilization, how its foundations were laid and its chief elements introduced.

Prof. KENDRIC C. BABCOCK, University of Minnesota:—"It is one of the best books of the kind which I have seen. We shall use it the coming term."

Prof. MARSHALL S. BROWN, Michigan University:—"I regard the work as a very valuable treatment of the great movements of history during the Middle Ages, and as one destined to be extremely helpful to young students."

BOSTON HERALD:—"Professor Adams admirably presents the leading features of a thousand years of social, political, and religious development in the history of the world. It is valuable from beginning to end."

HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES.

By E. BENJAMIN ANDREWS, D.D., LL.D., President of Brown University. With maps. Two vols., crown octavo, $4.00.

BOSTON ADVERTISER:—"We doubt if there has been so complete, graphic, and so thoroughly impartial a history of our country condensed into the same space. It must become a standard."

ADVANCE:—"One of the best popular, general histories of America, if not the best."

HERALD AND PRESBYTER:—"The very history that many people have been looking for. It does not consist simply of minute statements, but treats of causes and effects with philosophical grasp and thoughtfulness. It is the work of a scholar and thinker."

THE HISTORY OF ROME, from the Earliest Time to the Period of Its Decline. By Dr. Theodor Mommsen. Translated by W. P. Dickson, D.D., LL.D. A New Edition, Revised throughout, and embodying recent additions. Five vols., with Map. Price per set, $10.00.

"A work of the very highest merit; its learning is exact and profound; its narrative full of genius and skill; its descriptions of men are admirably vivid."—*London Times.*

"Since the days of Niebuhr, no work on Roman History has appeared that combines so much to attract, instruct, and charm the reader. Its style—a rare quality in a German author—is vigorous, spirited, and animated."—Dr. Schmitz.

THE PROVINCES OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE. From Cæsar to Diocletian. By Theodor Mommsen. Translated by William P. Dickson, D.D., LL.D. With maps. Two vols., 8vo, $6.00.

"The author draws the wonderfully rich and varied picture of the conquest and administration of that great circle of peoples and lands which formed the empire of Rome outside of Italy, their agriculture, trade, and manufactures, their artistic and scientific life, through all degrees of civilization, with such detail and completeness as could have come from no other hand than that of this great master of historical research."—Prof. W. A. Packard, Princeton College.

THE HISTORY OF THE ROMAN REPUBLIC. Abridged from the History by Professor Theodor Mommsen, by C. Bryans and F. J. R. Hendy. 12mo, $1.75.

"It is a genuine boon that the essential parts of Mommsen's Rome are thus brought within the easy reach of all, and the abridgment seems to me to preserve unusually well the glow and movement of the original."—Prof. Tracy Peck, Yale University.

"The condensation has been accurately and judiciously effected. I heartily commend the volume as the most adequate embodiment, in a single volume, of the main results of modern historical research in the field of Roman affairs."—Prof. Henry M. Baird, University of City of New York.

THE DAWN OF HISTORY. An Introduction to Pre-Historic Study. New and Enlarged Edition. Edited by C. F. KEARY. 12mo, cloth, $1.25.

This work treats successively of the earliest traces of man; of language, its growth, and the story it tells of the pre-historic users of it; of early social life, the religions, mythologies, and folk-tales, and of the history of writing. The present edition contains about one hundred pages of new matter, embodying the results of the latest researches.

"A fascinating manual. In its way, the work is a model of what a popular scientific work should be."—*Boston Sat. Eve. Gazette.*

THE ORIGIN OF NATIONS. By Professor GEORGE RAWLINSON, M.A. 12mo, with maps, $1.00.

The first part of this book discusses the antiquity of civilization in Egypt and the other early nations of the East. The second part is an examination of the ethnology of Genesis, showing its accordance with the latest results of modern ethnographical science.

"A work of genuine scholarly excellence, and a useful offset to a great deal of the superficial current literature on such subjects."—*Congregationalist.*

MANUAL OF MYTHOLOGY. For the Use of Schools, Art Students, and General Readers. Founded on the Works of Petiscus, Preller, and Welcker. By ALEXANDER S. MURRAY, Department of Greek and Roman Antiquities, British Museum. With 45 Plates. Reprinted from the Second Revised London Edition. Crown 8vo, $1.75.

"It has been acknowledged the best work on the subject to be found in a concise form, and as it embodies the results of the latest researches and discoveries in ancient mythologies, it is superior for school and general purposes as a handbook to any of the so-called standard works."—*Cleveland Herald.*

"Whether as a manual for reference, a text-book for school use, or for the general reader, the book will be found very valuable and interesting."—*Boston Journal.*

THE HISTORY OF GREECE. By Prof. Dr. ERNST CURTIUS. Translated by Adolphus William Ward, M.A., Fellow of St. Peter's College, Cambridge, Prof. of History in Owen's College, Manchester. Five volumes, crown 8vo. Price per set, $10.00.

"We cannot express our opinion of Dr. Curtius' book better than by saying that it may be fitly ranked with Theodor Mommsen's great work."—*London Spectator.*

"As an introduction to the study of Grecian history, no previous work is comparable to the present for vivacity and picturesque beauty, while in sound learning and accuracy of statement it is not inferior to the elaborate productions which enrich the literature of the age."—*N. Y. Daily Tribune.*

CÆSAR: a Sketch. By JAMES ANTHONY FROUDE, M.A. 12mo, gilt top, $1.50.

"This book is a most fascinating biography and is by far the best account of Julius Cæsar to be found in the English language."—*The London Standard.*

"He combines into a compact and nervous narrative all that is known of the personal, social, political, and military life of Cæsar; and with his sketch of Cæsar includes other brilliant sketches of the great man, his friends, or rivals, who contemporaneously with him formed the principal figures in the Roman world."—*Harper's Monthly.*

CICERO. Life of Marcus Tullius Cicero. By WILLIAM FORSYTH, M.A., Q.C. 20 Engravings. New Edition. 2 vols., crown 8vo, in one, gilt top, $2.50.

The author has not only given us the most complete and well-balanced account of the life of Cicero ever published; he has drawn an accurate and graphic picture of domestic life among the best classes of the Romans, one which the reader of general literature, as well as the student, may peruse with pleasure and profit.

"A scholar without pedantry, and a Christian without cant, Mr. Forsyth seems to have seized with praiseworthy tact the precise attitude which it behooves a biographer to take when narrating the life, the personal life of Cicero. Mr. Forsyth produces what we venture to say will become one of the classics of English biographical literature, and will be welcomed by readers of all ages and both sexes of all professions and of no profession at all."—*London Quarterly*

VALUABLE WORKS ON CLASSICAL LITERATURE.

THE HISTORY OF ROMAN LITERATURE. From the Earliest Period to the Death of Marcus Aurelius. With Chronological Tables, etc., for the use of Students. By C. T. CRUTTWELL, M.A. Crown 8vo, $2.50.

Mr. Cruttwell's book is written throughout from a purely literary point of view, and the aim has been to avoid tedious and trivial details. The result is a volume not only suited for the student, but remarkably readable for all who possess any interest in the subject.

"Mr. Cruttwell has given us a genuine history of Roman literature, not merely a descriptive list of authors and their productions, but a well elaborated portrayal of the successive stages in the intellectual development of the Romans and the various forms of expression which these took in literature."—*N. Y. Nation.*

UNIFORM WITH THE ABOVE.

A HISTORY OF GREEK LITERATURE. From the Earliest Period of Demosthenes. By FRANK BYRON JEVONS, M.A., Tutor in the University of Durham. Crown 8vo, $2.50.

The author goes into detail with sufficient fullness to make the history complete, but he never loses sight of the commanding lines along which the Greek mind moved, and a clear understanding of which is necessary to every intelligent student of universal literature.

"It is beyond all question the best history of Greek literature that has hitherto been published."—*London Spectator.*

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS,

153-157 Fifth Avenue, New York.

BOOK TO BE RETURNED

MAR 18 1968				

0 00021 00008633 5

940.22
S451

Seebohm, Frederic
AUTHOR

The era of the Protestant revolution.
TITLE

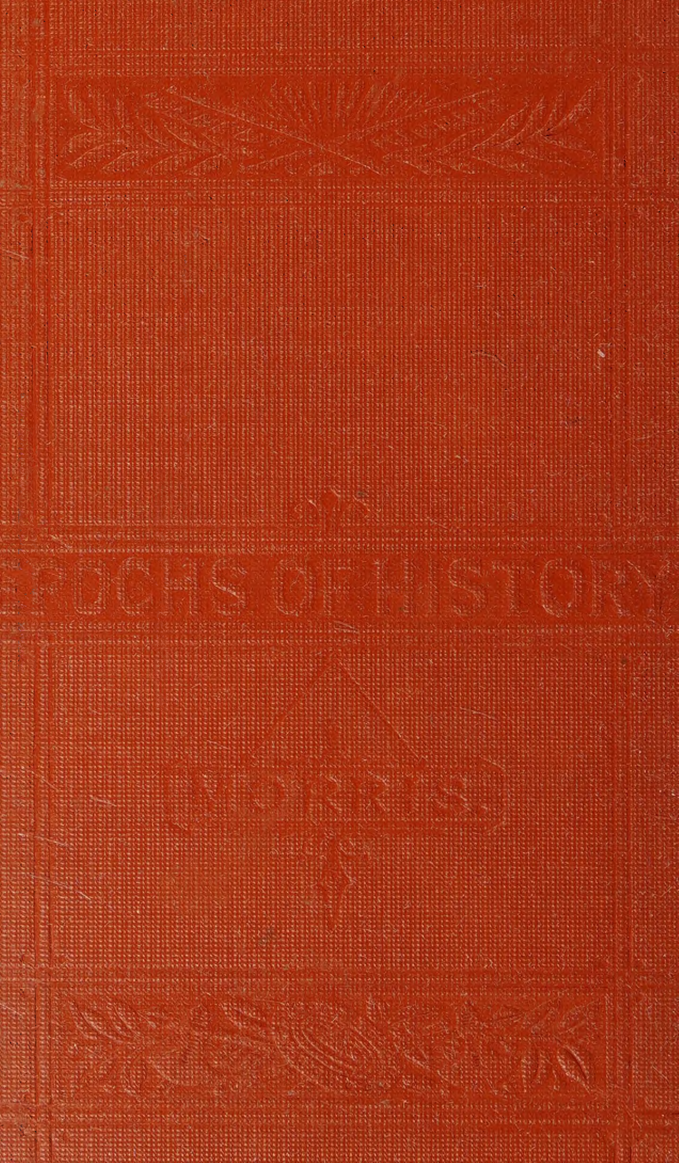
8463

Borrower's Name

940.22
S451

Seebohm, Frederic
The era of the Protestant revolution.

8463



OCHS OF HISTOR

[illegible] MORRIS.